

Brother Gou and the other wolves hadn't gone completely crazy just because they were too excited. They did leave some men behind to drive their cars away.

As for the rest, they either had broken arms or broken legs, and were all stuffed into their cars like trash.

As Jiang Ning watched them drive off in a great hurry, he waved and said, "Hope to see you again!"

Who would still dare to come here?

Zhang Cheng and the rest drove as quickly as they could and couldn't wait to go as faraway as possible from Jiang Ning and the rest of his demons!

These people had come all the way from Shengcheng, but before they could even set foot into Donghai, all their men were down and all the bosses lost \$50 million each.

They had come here to earn more money, but before they could even step past the boundary marker of Donghai, they had lost both people and money.

They hadn't just lost money. All their best men had broken arms and legs, so they were now in a terrible position. If the other bosses in Shengcheng found out that they were in such a poor condition, it would spell disaster for them.

It was a humiliation!

A great insult!

But who would dare to spread this news?

They had to keep what happened that night a secret, otherwise they would face attacks from others within the illegal circles. They might lose their territory or worse, lose their lives if that happened.

For Jiang Ning's side, this was a great victory.

Brother Gou and the wolves were still very excited. They knew very well how terrifying the training Jiang Ning set up for them really was.

Two months ago, they would never have imagined that thirty men could bring down more than three hundred men.

And now they could feel that they still weren't at their maximum yet.

Jiang Ning was now their god!

"So we've earned a bridge and three roads. We should be grateful to these bosses."

Jiang Ning left instructions with Brother Gou and got him to bring the rest back to rest while he went home himself.

This was nothing to Jiang Ning.

It was just a small fight.

It was nearly 11PM by the time he got home. Lin Yuzhen had just reached home after work too.

She had bathed and changed into cotton pajamas with a Mickey Mouse design in the front, but she was still looking at company reports.

When she heard Jiang Ning come home, she turned around. "Why are you back so late today?"

"Worried about me?" Jiang Ning laughed. "I thought you might be hungry, so I went around to see what yummy food I could buy for you."

Lin Yuzhen raised an eyebrow. "And where's the yummy food?"

"Mum says eating supper is bad for your stomach, so I have to listen to what she says," Jiang Ning said with a straight face. "I'm going to bathe."

Before she could say anything, Jiang Ning had run off already.

She knew this fellow was lying to her.

But she couldn't be bothered and went back to reading her reports.

After bathing, Jiang Ning blow dried his hair and climbed onto the bed very naturally. He tucked himself into the blanket and left only his head out to stare at Lin Yuzhen, who was still busy working.

"Wifey...time to sleep."

“Ok.”

Lin Yuzhen didn't turn back.

“Wifey, staying up late is bad for your skin.”

“Hmm?” Lin Yuzhen turned to stare at him and her face instantly reddened. “Why...why are you in my bed?!”

She suddenly felt that her voice was very loud, so she quickly dropped her voice at the last part of the sentence, afraid that her parents would overhear her.

“It's very cold sleeping on the floor,” Jiang Ning put on a pitiful expression. “The bed is much warmer. I've already warmed the bed for you, so quickly go to bed.”

Thump!

Thump!

Lin Yuzhen's face was all red and her heart was racing. She didn't know what to say and she didn't even dare to look at Jiang Ning now.

Was this guy...up to something?

She glanced at the time and saw that it was nearly midnight. It was true that she shouldn't stay up so late.

She turned off the lights and quietly walked over to the bed. She pursed her lips as she saw that

Chapter 201 Warming the Bed

Jiang Ning had taken up half the space. If she slept next to him, their bodies would inevitably touch each other...



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

“Jiang Ning...”

“I’ll move over a little.”

Jiang Ning’s eyes looked at Lin Yuzhen with great anticipation.

Lin Yuzhen took a deep breath and tucked herself into the blanket. She immediately felt a warmth surround her because the blanket was so nice and warm.

“You...you are not allowed to move.”

Jiang Ning nodded. “I won’t touch you.”

Lin Yuzhen stiffened for a long while and realized that Jiang Ning really didn’t move. He was like a statue and didn’t shift at all, but her face was still red.

They were husband and wife and she was slowly accepting Jiang Ning and even relied a lot on Jiang Ning. But she still felt it was too fast to advance to that stage.

They only knew each other for three months after all.

“Are you still cold?” She couldn’t help asking when she turned her head to see that Jiang Ning was still shivering slightly.

“A little,” replied Jiang Ning quietly.

If those enemies of his in the past found out that

this man who was stronger than a bull was afraid of the cold, their jaws would probably drop in shock.

“Then...then you can move in a little.”

Lin Yuzhen's voice was even softer now, like a little mosquito fluttering its wings. She decided that she needed to get a thicker blanket soon.

Jiang Ning inched inwards and the two of them were right next to one another.

Lin Yuzhen's face became even redder when she could smell his manly scent.

She was even more nervous now.

“Go to bed.”

Jiang Ning didn't do anything more intimate. They just lay back to back and close to each other so that the blanket could cover them both fully.

He could even feel that Lin Yuzhen's heart was beating very quickly.

“This silly girl, is she afraid that I can't control myself?” wondered Jiang Ning in his heart. “I wish!”

This shy and nervous Lin Yuzhen was simply too alluring!

Lin Yuzhen had no idea when she fell asleep. When she woke up the next morning, Jiang Ning

was already eating breakfast at the table.

She glanced at Jiang Ning but there was no change on his face. But when she thought about how close they were the night before, Lin Yuzhen's face instantly turned red.

"Yuzhen, why's your face so red? Are you having a fever?" asked Su Mei out of concern. She reached out to touch Lin Yuzhen's forehead but Lin Yuzhen immediately dodged her hand.

"N-n-no."

Lin Yuzhen immediately ran off into the bathroom.

"Why is her face so red first thing in the morning?" Su Mei was amused. "Jiang Ning, do you know anything?"

"Nope."

Jiang Ning continued to eat his breakfast with a straight face.

.....

While Jiang Ning was feeling all amused and eating his breakfast quietly, Shengcheng seemed to have gone through an earthquake. The entire illegal circle was completely shocked.

Those who hadn't sent their men out yet couldn't help but gasp in horror and feel their back covered in cold sweat after hearing this information.

“They all got beaten up? Zhang Cheng and the rest all got beaten up?”

“That’s right! Apparently they hadn’t even set foot into Donghai yet and their arms and legs were broken and they were thrown out!”

“On top of that, each boss had to pay \$50 million to make up for making those people work during their rest time.”

There was silence.

Complete silence.

Then there was fear in the air.

Those 300 men were the best men that those five bosses had. Their limbs had been broken before they could even step into Donghai?

And the other side only had thirty people?

What the hell was going on?!

Hadn’t Master Fu already confirmed that Donghai had no sign of the north? Where did so many highly skilled fighters come from?

Did Master Fu set this up as a trap for them to fall into?

There was no reason for him to do that. His top killer, Broken Sword, was enough to make all of them fear for their lives. So what was really going on?

Chapter 202 Shock!

Donghai seemed to be covered in a layer of fog and nobody could see it clearly. They were all raring to go earlier, but now they didn't dare to. They wouldn't bet their lives on it.

Not just them – even Master Fu couldn't see through the fog.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Back in the pavilion at the back of Masquerade Club.

Master Fu was still sitting there but he wasn't playing chess. He was just seated there with a slight frown on his face for quite a while.

Broken Sword sat across him and was equally silent.

The wind gently blew in and formed ripples on the surface of the nearby pond.

"I didn't expect this at all," Master Fu finally spoke up after a long while. "This young fellow is so impressive."

It was way beyond what he had imagined.

"Impressive is right. Those thirty men were pretty much trash just three months ago," replied Broken Sword calmly. "But of course, when you look at them now, they're just better looking trash."

He didn't add on that since they could improve this much in just three months, then they could go a much longer way in the future. But how far they could go depended entirely on that man.

"You're sure there's no sign of the north?"

Master Fu asked Broken Sword one more time. This was totally unlike him. He never asked the same thing twice.

"There is only one family with the surname 'Jiang'

in the north, but that family doesn't have anyone with this name. But of course, he could use a pseudonym."

But to Broken Sword, a genuinely highly skilled fighter would never care to use a pseudonym. "Are you worried that he's coming for us?"

It was difficult not to think so.

"The families of the north are in a big fight now, and the one backing us isn't in a good position right now," sighed Master Fu. "If someone wants to replace me at this point, it's only normal."

He couldn't interfere nor say anything when it came to a clash between that level of power.

Master Fu could command the illegal circles of Tianhai, but he was merely a spokesperson for that person in the north. To put it bluntly, he was just that person's dog.

Now that Jiang Ning had suddenly risen in Donghai, the older Master Fu couldn't help but suspect that someone wanted to replace him.

Broken Sword frowned slightly. "I'll go and kill him."

Master Fu shook his head. "Don't be rash. We still don't know if he's a friend or a foe."

Besides, Broken Sword had said that Jiang Ning's capabilities were no less than his own. So even if he managed to kill Jiang Ning, Broken Sword

might be severely injured as well, and Master Fu didn't want that to happen.

As for whether Jiang Ning was a friend or foe, actually Master Fu had an idea already. Jiang Ning was probably not a foe, but it would be hard to be friends.

"Zhao," Master Fu called out for Butler Zhao who was standing outside the pavilion. "Update me."

Butler Zhao came forward. "Yes, Master Fu."

Butler Zhao was Master Fu's eyes. He would get information from Masquerade Club on everything happening in Tianhai, then report to Master Fu.

"The change in Donghai is tremendous. The legal circle and the illegal circle is very well coordinated, so regardless of whether you're talking about the city's economic development or the orderliness in the illegal circle, it's really shocking."

"Jiang Ning is working behind the scenes all this while and hasn't really made any appearance, instead using Huang Yuming as his representative. So it's very hard to tell what he's doing right now."

Master Fu and Broken Sword raised their heads at the same time and there was a curiosity in their eyes.

"They have no illegal dealings or even businesses in gray areas. Everything is legal, and besides earning enough to pay their staff and

subordinates, the rest is donated to build schools, libraries, parks and to help the needy.”

Master Fu’s eyes narrowed slightly, while a look of surprise appeared on Broken Sword’s face.

They had never heard of anyone doing something like this before. Who on earth in the illegal circles would do such a thing?

Nobody would make money just to do charity. That was probably a cover for something else.

“Master Fu, they’re not doing this just to cover up something else. They’ve been doing this all this while.” Butler Zhao knew Master Fu well and could tell what he was thinking about. He laughed and said, “This time Zhang Cheng and the other bosses went to Donghai to try to snatch some territory away, but besides not getting anything, Jiang Ning took \$200 million from them!”

“And Jiang Ning used this \$200 million to repair roads and build bridges.”



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Even though they weren't on the same side, Butler Zhao did have quite some respect for Jiang Ning.

Every man for himself – that was only normal. But Jiang Ning had done so much and none of it was for himself. Everything he did was to help Donghai to develop further and to make the people's lives better.

Nobody would have believed it if they hadn't seen it for themselves.

"The legal circle has changed tremendously as well. They have been supporting the people, improving the lives of the people and making revolutionary changes. Also, they've worked with Huang Yuming quite a bit."

This part was the most important.

Master Fu had clearly sensed something. Being able to connect with the legal circle was something that an ordinary person wouldn't have been able to do.

Even if there was no sign of the north, they weren't far.

Butler Zhao didn't continue. He had reported everything he was supposed to, so the next step was up to Master Fu.

After a long period of silence, Master Fu finally spoke up.

"Broken Sword, go pay Donghai a visit."

Broken Sword nodded.

“Go and check if he’s a friend or a foe.”

“Got it.”

Broken Sword didn’t hesitate. He got up and left.

“Zhao.”

“Yes, Master Fu.”

Butler Zhao nodded.

“Go visit Zhang Cheng and the rest on my behalf.”

“Got it.”

Butler Zhao nodded, bowed and walked out.

Master Fu was left alone in the pavilion.

He was a little plump and after getting older, he started feeling tired after sitting for too long. He got up and walked over to the little pond. His eyes narrowed as he watched the ripples on the surface of the water.

“What an interesting young man. I hope we are not enemies.”

He had a smile on his face, but his eyes were cold and murderous. “Otherwise I’ll have to wipe you out.”

The wind continued to blow gently, but the surface

of the water rippled even faster than before.

.....

Jiang Ning drove Lin Yuzhen to the office.

“It’s nearing the Labor Day holiday and Su Yun says she’d be on holiday and wants to look around Shengcheng’s universities. You can accompany her.”

Lin Yuzhen wasn’t free to do this sort of thing. Even if it was a public holiday, she didn’t get to take a break because there were way too many things to handle.

“Sure.”

Jiang Ning had no objections. He had already promised Su Yun a long time back.

Besides, he thought he should have a look at Shengcheng.

“You’re not going up?”

Lin Yuzhen had gotten out of the car, but Jiang Ning hadn’t turned the car engine off.

“I’m going to take a smoke, you can go up first.”

Lin Yuzhen nodded and left first.

Jiang Ning then turned off the engine and got out of the car. He didn’t go upstairs and headed for the small park next to the office building instead.

There weren't many people in the small park, just two or three people. Jiang Ning walked to the manmade lake and watched the rippling water of the lake with a fairly calm face.

His back was exposed, and it was actually possible to attack him from almost anywhere.

But Broken Sword didn't do anything. He knew that Jiang Ning had already discovered that he had followed Jiang Ning from his home all the way here.

"My senior, why didn't you tell me that you're coming to Donghai? I could have brought you to a nice teahouse and taken care of you," said Jiang Ning calmly. He didn't turn around and continued to look out at the lake.

The Grim Reaper was here!

The Supreme Grim Reaper of Shengcheng was here!

If Huang Yuming was here, his face would have paled and his legs would have gone weak from fright.

It was the Supreme Grim Reaper of Shengcheng!

This was the terrifying highly skilled fighter who had singlehandedly made sure all of Tianhai's illegal circles didn't dare to try anything funny. He had actually come to Donghai, and he was now standing less than 20 feet away from behind Jiang Ning.

“I’m not used to the tea in Donghai.”

Broken Sword looked at Jiang Ning from behind, then walked over to stand next to him. “But the tea is Shengcheng is not bad. Not sure if you’re interested in trying?”

Jiang Ning turned and smiled. “Shengcheng’s tea? But I’m a greedy man and I’m afraid that I’d get addicted and I’d want it all for myself once I drink it. What am I going to do if that happens?”



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Broken Sword narrowed his eyes. These were very audacious words!

If someone else had said it, he would have been dead immediately after saying such a thing.

“Then I’ll be waiting for you in Shengcheng.”

He didn’t say anymore. He could tell that Jiang Ning was agreeable.

Broken Sword had come quickly and left just as quickly. Those were all the words he said.

Jiang Ning continued to stand by the lake. He was nearly done with his cigarette.

After he couldn’t sense Broken Sword anymore, Brother Gou cautiously walked out from behind. His face was wary and he was on high alert.

Brother Gou almost died of fright when he discovered Broken Sword.

Even though he was pretty highly skilled himself, he knew that the moment Broken Sword made his move, he wouldn’t even last one second.

So he had called everyone over and didn’t dare to slack off, just in case Broken Sword was here to make trouble for Jiang Ning.

But Broken Sword had come here only to invite Jiang Ning over to Shengcheng.

“Big Boss, you can’t go to Shengcheng!” Brother Gou had a serious expression on his face.

That was like walking into the lion’s den. It was where Master Fu had absolute control for the past twenty odd decades, and Broken Sword, the Supreme Grim Reaper, was also there!

“There’s nowhere that I can’t go,” Jiang Ning laughed and turned to look at Brother Gou. “Are you very nervous about it?”

Brother Gou didn’t know whether to laugh or cry. How could he not be nervous? That man was the one who had all of Tianhai’s illegal circles under his thumb, and he was viciousness kept them all in check.

“Train well. In the future, you won’t be any less than him.”

Jiang Ning just left him with that. He threw his cigarette butt away and left.

Brother Gou was stunned for a moment, then his breathing quickened.

He wouldn’t be any weaker than Broken Sword, the Supreme Grim Reaper?

Just as long as he continued to train hard?

Brother Gou took a deep breath. He couldn't believe Jiang Ning had said something like that!

Their god said that!

He immediately realized that Jiang Ning wasn't bothered by Broken Sword at all.

"Dismissed!" Brother Gou waved his hand and looked like he was talking to nobody.

He knew that if Broken Sword didn't want anyone to notice his presence, then Brother Gou wouldn't have sensed him.

So since Broken Sword let them notice his presence, then even all thirty of them wouldn't have been able to stop Broken Sword.

Jiang Ning went upstairs to find that Lin Yuzhen was already very busy.

He didn't want to disturb his wife, so he just sat on the sofa and started playing with his phone.

After a while, the phone rang. Jiang Ning looked at who the caller was and was very amused.

"Hello Su Yun, yes it's me."

This little girl was so anxious she just called him directly. "Ok, I'll get someone to pick you up."

After putting down the phone, Jiang Ning called Number 3. Lin Wen didn't need the car for the time being, so he got Number 3 to pick Su Yun up from Xiancheng.

At the Su house in Xiancheng.

Su Yun was still excited after hanging up.

She had classes today, but she had taken leave in advance so that she could spend a couple more days in Shengcheng to play.

"You are terrible, why did you bother Yuzhen?" her mother chided her. "She's the CEO of Lin Group and she's very busy now."

"Mum, I asked Yuzhen earlier already. She said Jiang Ning isn't busy, so he's taking me to Shengcheng," replied Su Yun with a red face.

Jiang Ning wasn't just not busy. To Lin Yuzhen, he was too bored. Whenever she was super busy, he was just there casually sitting on the sofa with his legs crossed. Lin Yuzhen couldn't stand it and was more than happy to give him something to do.

"Nonsense! Jiang Ning is clearly someone who

handles important matters, so how could he be not busy?"

Her mother glared at Su Yun. "You make sure you be good in Donghai, and don't make any trouble for Jiang Ning, you hear me?"

Her daughter was generally mature and obedient, but she was still young and playful after all, so it was better to leave her with a few instructions.

"Don't worry Mum, I'm just going to Shengcheng to see which university I'd like to attend."

Su Yun nodded very seriously.

She had taken Jiang Ning's advice and didn't want to be too far away from home, so she decided to go to a university in Shengcheng. Most of the universities were about the same, so it was just a matter of which environment she fancied.

She was beginning to think that this brother-in-law of hers was very interesting.

After she was all packed, Su Yun waited at the door.

A Volkswagen stopped at the gate and Su Hong got out of the car. She noticed that Su Yun was carrying a small suitcase, so she couldn't help but ask, "Su Yun, where are you going? No school today?"

"First Aunt, I'm going to visit Yuzhen."

Su Hong frowned. "Why are you going to visit Yuzhen? Does she have space for you stay?"

Su Mei's house only had two rooms and Lin Yuzhen was already married. Was Su Yun going to end up sleeping on the sofa?

"I can stay at a hotel," replied Su Yun with a serious face.

She didn't want to trouble her Third Aunt either. She didn't mind staying at a hotel.

Su Hong laughed and there was disdain on her face as well as a tinge of jealousy, "Then CEO Lin would definitely arrange for you to stay at some five star hotel."

She looked up at Su Yun's mother. "Are you sending Su Yun to the bus terminal?"



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 206 Not Many, Just Thirty Cars

Her mother replied, “No, Jiang Ning said he’s sent someone to pick Su Yun up.”

She didn’t like this sister-in-law at all. She was quite sure that Su Hong was here to ask her mother for that bangle again – that \$56,000 jade bangle that Lin Yuzhen gave her grandmother.

“Tsk, you believe him just because he said so?” Su Hong snorted. “Forget it, after I finish talking to Mum, I’ll send Su Yun to the bus terminal.”

Just as they were speaking, there was a car honk.

BEEP BEEP!

Su Yun looked up and she became excited.

Her mother also turned to look and saw a black car drive in slowly. It was the same logo as before, just that this car was so long and it looked much more expensive than Su Hong’s car.

When the two cars were parked side by side, Su Hong’s face instantly turned red and she felt embarrassed.

After they went home the last time, Xu



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 206 Not Many, Just Thirty Cars

Ming told her how much Jiang Ning's car really cost, and she really wanted to find a hole to bury herself in.

This car...looked even more expensive than the previous one!

How many cars did Lin Yuzhen's family own?

"May I ask if Miss Su Yun lives here?"

Number 3 was dressed smartly in a suit and asked politely after getting out of the car.

"Yes she does! I'm Su Yun!" Su Yun responded with a gleeful smile. "Are you Number 3?"

"That's right. Mr Jiang told me to pick you up," nodded Number 3. He noticed that Su Yun had a small suitcase, so he went to help her carry it.

"Wait!" Su Hong blocked his way and frowned as she said, "Su Yun, aren't you going to confirm if this man is really who he says he is? What if he's a bad guy?"

She looked Number 3 up and down. She could tell that the suit he was wearing



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 206 Not Many, Just Thirty Cars

wasn't cheap.

Wasn't he just a driver? Why would he be wearing such expensive clothes?

"Indeed, you should confirm this." Number 3 glanced at Su Hong but didn't say anything else. He took his phone out and passed it to Su Yun. "This is Mr Jiang's number, you can call him."

Su Yun stuck her tongue out in embarrassment but took the phone and called Jiang Ning. After Jiang Ning confirmed the situation, she returned the phone to Number 3.

"Sorry to trouble you."

"No worries."

Number 3 took Su Yun's suitcase and put in the trunk. The trunk had a sensor and both Su Hong and Su Yun's mother were all very curious about it. It could open and close with just a kick?

That was too high tech, wasn't it?

"Does Lin Yuzhen's family have a lot of cars?" Su Hong couldn't help asking.



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 206 Not Many, Just Thirty Cars

Number 3 glanced at her. “Not many.”

Su Hong breathed a sigh of relief.

“But Mr Jiang gave each of us a car, so that’s thirty cars.”

Number 3 then got into the car, waved to Su Yun’s mother and drove off.

Su Hong stood where she was and took a long time to snap out of her daze.

Not many?

Jiang Ning gave away thirty BMWs?

She started calculating how much that would cost in total. The moment she realized how much it was, her legs nearly gave way.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

The Lins were so rich now?

Thirty cars was \$15 million!

Jiang Ning had given the cars away just like that?

Su Hong had her mouth open wide and her lips trembled. She was wondering why didn't he also give them one since they were relatives.

She turned to call Su Yun's mother.

"I'm going to buy some groceries, you can make yourself at home."

Su Yun's mother didn't react when she saw how Su Hong looked regretful now. She knew Su Hong was now regretting how she had looked down on Su Mei's family.

Su Yun was quite excited in the car. This was her second visit to Donghai. She last went when she was still in elementary school, and she had gone to visit Su Mei's family for the new year.

After that Lin Wen got into a car accident and became paralyzed, so their financial situation became very difficult. Su Gang was afraid that Su Mei would have to



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 207 Continue to Sleep on the Floor (Part 1)

spend on entertaining them if they visited her, so he didn't let Su Yun visit them anymore.

Su Gang himself also just went to visit Lin Wen twice and came back without even having dinner at their place so that Su Mei could save on this.

"Mr Number 3, is Yuzhen very busy?"

"CEO Lin is very busy lately. Chairman Lin is also very busy."

Lin Group was now developing at a rapid pace. Lin Wen and Lin Yuzhen were in charge of so many things, so they were drowning in work.

"Ohhh...so looks like Jiang Ning is the one taking me to Shengcheng."

Su Yun nodded and grinned, "Yuzhen said my brother-in-law isn't busy."

Number 3 just smiled. He didn't dare to say that Jiang Ning wasn't just not busy, he was so free, snacking and having tea in Lin Yuzhen's office everyday, agitating poor Lin Yuzhen.

But the real boss was Jiang Ning.



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 207 Continue to Sleep on the Floor (Part 1)

When Number 3 sent Su Yun to Lin Yuzhen's house, Su Mei was already waiting for her inside.

"Third Aunt!" Su Yun hopped out of the car and ran into Su Mei's arms like a needy little girl. "I've not seen you for so long!"

"About a year?" Su Mei laughed and patted Su Yun on the head. "Wow, you've grown taller!"

"Come in, come in!" she waved to Su Yun. Then she also called out to Number 3, "Number 3, come in and have some tea too, take a break."

"Auntie Su, it's alright. You two go ahead, I have to return to the office, Uncle Lin needs the car later."

Number 3 smiled, waved at them and drove off.

The house wasn't large and looked just like how Su Yun remembered it.

"I can't believe you're going to take your college entrance exams already," Su Mei said as she opened a packet of drinks for Su Yun. "Have you decided on which university you want to go to?"



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 207 Continue to Sleep on the Floor (Part 1)

“Not yet. I’m going to Shengcheng this time because I want to see which school I like.” Su Yun took a sip, then hooked her arm around Su Mei’s. “Donghai doesn’t have any good universities, otherwise I’d come here for college!”

“If I studied here, I’d be able to come and visit you often.”

Su Mei started wondering why Donghai didn’t have a good university.

Thankfully she didn’t say this out loud in front of Jiang Ning, otherwise Jiang Ning would probably make sure Donghai had one immediately.

“Don’t worry, Shengcheng isn’t far from us either. Jiang Ning will bring you to Shengcheng tomorrow to have a look and you can choose one you like.”

Lin Yuzhen had already told Su Mei about this in advance.

Su Mei got up. “You can watch TV by yourself, I need to start cooking. I’ll whip up a few yummy dishes for all you hungry little cats!”

She poked Su Yun’s mouth when she



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 207 Continue to Sleep on the Floor (Part 1)

mentioned hungry cats, and Su Yun immediately replied with a huge grin, “I came here because I wanted to eat your cooking!”

“Trying to butter up to me now, eh?”

Su Mei went into the kitchen while Su Yun sat on the sofa and watched TV as she wondered where she was going to spend the night.

She didn’t want to stay in a hotel, but Su Mei’s house only had two rooms. If Lin Yuzhen wasn’t married, she could still share the room with Lin Yuzhen. But now there was Jiang Ning, and she couldn’t possibly sleep in the same room as two of them.

Su Yun’s face turned red when she thought about this. But what she was really curious about was whether Lin Yuzhen was sharing the bed with Jiang Ning.

She had heard Su Hong say that the two of them were in a fake marriage.

Jiang Ning came back with Lin Yuzhen and Lin Wen punctually after work. It was rare that they actually didn't work overtime.

"Third Uncle!"

"Yuzhen!"

"Brother-in-law!"

Su Yun immediately greeted them sweetly when she saw them.

Lin Wen nodded. "I haven't seen Su Yun in so long, you're all grown up now."

"She's going to take her college entrance exams soon, Dad."

Lin Yuzhen walked over to Su Yun. The two girls were around the same age and had plenty to talk about. Jiang Ning just nodded and walked over to the sofa to watch TV.

It was best not to interfere when women were having a conversation. That was definitely a smart move.

Su Mei made a whole table full of delicious dishes to welcome Su Yun. After dinner, Jiang Ning watched Su Yun go into the



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 208 Continue to Sleep on the Floor (Part 2)

room with Lin Yuzhen, and he stood where he was.

Since Su Yun was staying the night, she was going to share the room with Lin Yuzhen. Then what about him?

“Jiang Ning, you’ll have to suffer a bit tonight on the sofa.”

Lin Yuzhen poked her head out and her face turned red when she realized she seemed to have let slip that she was sharing the bed with Jiang Ning.

She stuck her tongue out and passed Jiang Ning’s pajamas to him. She whispered, “I have to work hard to earn more money and buy a bigger house.”

Jiang Ning didn’t say anything. He told himself he had to go through this for just two nights, then he was going to hug Lin Yuzhen to sleep every night after that.

As for buying a bigger house...

Jiang Ning had so much money, he could buy a bungalow anytime. But he didn’t want to. Two rooms was just right – Lin Wen and Su Mei in one room, he and Lin Yuzhen in the other. If there were more



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 208 Continue to Sleep on the Floor (Part 2)

rooms, Lin Yuzhen would definitely get him to sleep in a different room.

He would only consider buying a bigger house after he was sure Lin Yuzhen wasn't going to chase him out of the room first.

At night, Jiang Ning slept poorly. The sofa was nice and soft, but it didn't carry Lin Yuzhen's fragrance.

In the room, the two girls were curled up in bed and whispering to one another.

"Yuzhen, am I sleeping on Brother-in-law's side of the bed now?" asked Su Yun.

Lin Yuzhen quietly said, "Yeah..." Her voice was as soft as a mosquito.

If the lights weren't turned off, Su Yun would have seen that Lin Yuzhen's face was as red as an apple now.

"Have you two already...done that?"

"....."

Lin Yuzhen's face became even redder and started to feel hot. "You terrible girl! What are you talking about?!"



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 208 Continue to Sleep on the Floor (Part 2)

She reached out to pinch Su Yun and realized she had pinched her in an inappropriate place. She couldn't help but feel shocked that Su Yun was so big, and Su Yun's seemed bigger than hers even.

"Yuzhen, I'm already eighteen and I'm an adult now."

Su Yun proudly puffed her chest out. "You can touch them if you don't believe me."

Lin Yuzhen couldn't be bothered with her anymore. This little girl who used to follow her everywhere had suddenly become so big now. She suddenly felt envious and wondered if she had been undernourished when she was Su Yun's age.

She started wondering if Jiang Ning would complain about hers being too small.

Lin Yuzhen didn't know why this idea even popped into her head.

The two of them continued teasing each other and whispered all night, but none of it was about Su Yun's studies. Lin Yuzhen didn't even realize that Su Yun had asked her a lot of questions about Jiang Ning.

In the morning, Jiang Ning looked woefully



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 208 Continue to Sleep on the Floor (Part 2)

at Lin Yuzhen, but Lin Yuzhen's face turned red when she thought about the things that Su Yun asked her about the night before.

Since they were now sleeping on the same bed, it was easy for anything to happen. Su Yun told Lin Yuzhen about all the usual tricks men had that she had read online, and Lin Yuzhen's face was red the whole night.

Su Yun read something about how men were all liars, and they would promise to just hug you and not do anything. Then they would kiss you and then say it's just a kiss and promise not to touch you anywhere, then they would start to touch you.

Then something about how you wouldn't even know when your clothes came off and he would still promise to just touch and not go further, then after going further, he would promise not to move...

It was one trick after another!

Lin Yuzhen's face was so red it was going to bleed.

She had no idea how Su Yun knew so



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 208 Continue to Sleep on the Floor (Part 2)

much about these things at this age. She seemed to know even more than herself.

Lin Yuzhen thought about it, and realized that Jiang Ning seemed to have made it to the first step already.

“Maybe...maybe next time you should still sleep on the floor?”



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Jiang Ning opened his eyes wide.

“Can you bear to leave me on the floor?”

Jiang Ning looked sad as he said, “Wifey, I feel like I’m going to catch a cold soon. If I continue to sleep on the floor, I don’t think my body can take it.”

He looked so sad and pitiful, as if everything he was saying was true.

Lin Yuzhen looked very seriously at him and noticed that Jiang Ning really didn’t look too well.

“Then...”

“Anyway Su Yun is only staying for a total of two nights, I’ll just bear with it for now. But if I have to go through another two days, I won’t be able to take it.”

Jiang Ning sighed, “Wifey, let’s work hard together and buy a bigger house.”

This was exactly what Lin Yuzhen was thinking.

She nodded. “Yup. So you’ll have to bear with it for one more night, ok? Drive safely when you bring Su Yun to Shengcheng.”



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 209 A Visit

Jiang Ning replied, "Don't worry, I'll accomplish the mission my wife gave me!"

After breakfast, Number 3 sent Lin Wen and Lin Yuzhen to the office, while Brother Gou sent Jiang Ning and Su Yun to Shengcheng.

Brother Gou was very excited, not because Su Yun was pretty, but because he was going to Shengcheng!

That frightening place filled with danger!

In the past he would never have gone. To him, going to a place like that was basically sending himself to die.

But this time he was going with Jiang Ning, so he was confident.

"Brother-in-law, you don't look too well," whispered Su Yun. "Didn't sleep well last night?"

She had a cheeky look on her face.

"No, I slept very well."

"Or why don't I stay in a hotel tonight and you can have your place back? Donghai is a very secure place now, so I'll be safe,"



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 209 A Visit

she asked cautiously.

“No need.”

Jiang Ning glanced at Su Yun. He knew what she was driving at.

He was a little surprised. This little girl wasn't quiet and obedient like what he saw the last time. She was a little quirky and very playful.

Lin Yuzhen must have disallowed her to stay elsewhere the night before precisely because of this cheeky expression.

Since Jiang Ning didn't seem to want to talk, Su Yun stuck her tongue out and sat quietly in the car.

After more than an hour on the highway, the car arrived at Shengcheng.

Brother Gou looked in the rear mirror. “Big Boss, where to first?”

Su Yun turned to look at Jiang Ning. He was wholly in charge of the itinerary, so they were going to whichever university he said they were going.

“Let me visit a few friends first,” replied



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 209 A Visit

Jiang Ning. “After all, they donated money for Donghai’s infrastructure.”

Brother Gou immediately understood what he was talking about and made a turn.

Zhang Cheng and the rest had suffered a great loss this time round.

Paying up \$50 million wasn’t a lot. The worst part was that all their best men were now injured. Lin Wu’s broken limbs had just recovered and now they were broken again.

Never mind how much the medical bills were going to come up to. Recuperation would take them at least a few months.

Zhang Cheng was angry and frustrated, but he was also scared. Jiang Ning was too terrifying!

Those wolves with him were also really frightening!

He never wanted to step into Donghai again. That place was a whirlpool, and anyone who stepped in was going to die for sure.

The scene in front of him was quite



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 209 A Visit

strange. There were a dozen of them, all lying on the hospital bed with their arms and legs in a cast or in bandages, as if this hospital only treated such injuries.

“Boss, we can’t just let this go like that,” Lin Wu said through clenched teeth even though he couldn’t even move his neck. “If news of this gets out, we’ll be too embarrassed to stay in Shengcheng.”



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

“Fuck you! You tell me, how do you want to take revenge?!” Zhang Cheng spat out furiously. “Do you still dare to go to Donghai? You can go by yourself! I won't give a shit!”

Lin Wu didn't say anymore.

Go to Donghai himself?

Jiang Ning would definitely kill him.

“Not just us, the other bosses have suffered great losses as well. Those who didn't make a move don't dare to either.”

Gao Fei sighed and laughed bitterly as he looked around him. All their best fighters were all lying in bed now, so there was no way they could take any revenge now.

Apparently even Master Fu didn't react. The illegal circle of Shengcheng was in an uproar but he didn't say a single word, which made everyone even more fearful of Jiang Ning.

The whole group was angry, upset and indignant, but they didn't dare to talk about revenge anymore. There was no way any of them was setting foot into Donghai anytime soon.



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 210 Mr. Jiang, You're Here

“Boss! Boss! Bad news!”

Someone came running in from outside.

Zhang Cheng was relieved to find that there was at least one person who could run properly. He hadn't lost everybody.

“What are you yelling about? Did your entire family die or something?!” Zhang Cheng was in a foul mood and started yelling immediately. “What bad news?!”

“Dong...Donghai...”

Zhang Cheng, Lin Wu, Gao Fei and all the other men in the ward instantly shuddered at the word ‘Donghai’ and they nearly sprang up from their beds.

“Someone from Donghai is here!”

Zhang Cheng paled when he heard the full sentence and immediately sat up. “Who's here? Who from Donghai is here?”

“The one from that night...”

“I'm here.”

Before he could finish speaking, Jiang Ning had walked in with Brother Gou and



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 210 Mr. Jiang, You're Here

Su Yun.

When Zhang Cheng saw Jiang Ning's face again, he froze, then his heart started to tremble as a feeling of terror immediately overwhelmed his heart.

Then he suddenly realized that he was in Shengcheng.

Shengcheng was his own territory.

Jiang Ning actually dared to come to Shengcheng to die?

Was he asking to be killed?

"You actually dare to come to Shengcheng!" Zhang Cheng roared a little excitedly. They were just talking about how they wouldn't go to Donghai to take revenge, but Jiang Ning had come knocking on their door instead. Was he tired of living?

"Of course," Jiang Ning smiled faintly. "You contributed so much to Donghai's infrastructure, so of course I have to come and visit you. How are your arms and legs? Still ok?"

"....."



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 210 Mr. Jiang, You're Here

Zhang Cheng didn't know how to respond. He had never met anyone so arrogant before!

Jiang Ning's men had injured their arms and legs and still actually came to ask about their injuries.

"You...MEN!" Zhang Cheng smiled coldly and even his bones were chattering. "Jiang Ning! You came knocking on our doorstep, so don't blame me for getting nasty!"

"Brothers! Surround them!"

There were a dozen men around him lying in bed, but the men standing guard outside immediately dashed in. There were more than fifty of them.

Jiang Ning continued to stand where he was. Brother Gou stood next to Su Yun, and there was also no expression on his face. Neither of them look worried at all.

"Since you've come here to die, then don't blame me for it!"

Zhang Cheng had been suppressing the anger in his heart. He couldn't wait to turn Jiang Ning into ashes. He thought that there was no hope of taking revenge since



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 210 Mr. Jiang, You're Here

he couldn't go to Donghai, but Jiang Ning had come here instead.

There was a price to pay for being audacious!

He was about to give the order to break Jiang Ning's limbs when another voice could be heard.

"Boss! Boss! Butler Zhao is here!"

Zhang Cheng shook violently. Gao Fei and Lin Wu both exchanged glances and they were all filled with great excitement.

"Jiang Ning! You're dead meat today! Butler Zhao is here!"

Zhang Cheng was sure that Master Fu knew that Jiang Ning was in Shengcheng and was going to kill him off.

He dared Jiang Ning to keep being this arrogant!

This was Shengcheng, so there was no way Jiang Ning could continue being so complacent.

Zhang Cheng laughed loudly in excitement as he stared straight at Jiang Ning. This



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 210 Mr. Jiang, You're Here

was what happened to those who were too confident of themselves.

Butler Zhao quickly walked in, glanced at everyone on the beds, then walked over to Jiang Ning. He clasped his hands together and there was a polite smile on his face.

“Mr Jiang, you’re here.”



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

It suddenly became quiet.

A little too quiet.

Zhang Cheng was still yelling earlier about killing Jiang Ning right here and now, but his mouth was now opened like a frozen duck, and he couldn't get a single word out.

Lin Wu and Gao Fei were also lying where they were. They felt a ringing in their ears and couldn't hear anything else except what Butler Zhao just said.

"Mr Jiang, you're here."

Everyone present froze, and some of them who realized what was happening paled from fright.

That was Butler Zhao.

That was the butler who worked for the leader of Shengcheng's illegal Circle, Master Fu.

Zhang Cheng and the other bosses all had to greet Butler Zhao politely too. And now?

Butler Zhao had his hands clasped together and was greeting Jiang Ning



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 211 Are You Going to Hit Us?

politely!

“Hello.” Jiang Ning’s answer was simple and he just nodded slightly. He clearly didn’t know who Butler Zhao was.

“My surname is Zhao, and I’m the butler of Masquerade Club. Broken Sword has given me instructions to bring you over for tea if you’re in Shengcheng.”

Butler Zhao was basically telling Jiang Ning who he was, but this made Zhang Cheng feel like his heart was going to leap out of his mouth.

Broken Sword!

The grim reaper who killed so many people singlehandedly with a broken sword in Tianhai’s illegal circle to the point where nobody dared to pull any stunts.

He had invited Jiang Ning to Shengcheng to have tea?!

This was really terrifying!

“That’s right. I’ve come to Shengcheng today precisely because of the tea he talked about,” Jiang Ning nodded. “But since I’m here, I thought I should drop by



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 211 Are You Going to Hit Us?

and visit some old friends first. Butler Zhao, you've reached this place really quickly."

Butler Zhao just smiled. This was a difficult conversation.

He had eyes all over Shengcheng's illegal circle, and he also had his own informants among Zhang Cheng and the other bosses, so he was able to accurately grasp their every move.

He turned to look at Zhang Cheng. "I never knew. You are old friends with Mr Jiang?"

Of course Butler Zhang knew who broke Zhang Cheng's arms and legs. He was asking even though he already knew the answer.

"Hoho, yes yes, old friends."

Zhang Cheng felt that his voice was a little shaky.

"Why are there so many people here?" asked Butler Zhao after he looked around him.

"Uh...well..."



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 211 Are You Going to Hit Us?

Zhang Cheng felt his heart pound wildly. Jiang Ning was clearly a guest of Master Fu's, but he had wanted to kill him. How foolish!

"I'm...welcoming my old friend!"

Zhang Cheng threw a glance at his men and Gao Fei immediately shouted, "Welcome Jiang Ning! We welcome you to Shengcheng!"

The fifty odd men surrounding Jiang Ning immediately took the cue and shouted together, "Welcome Jiang Ning! We welcome you to Shengcheng!"

All of them had wide grins on their faces and looked as friendly as possible as they clapped as loudly as they could, afraid that Butler Zhao might be displeased with them.

The resounding applause and politeness made Brother Gou feel like laughing but he held it in and tried to continue looking stern and cool. But Su Yun couldn't hold it in anymore.

She was young and didn't have so many tricks up her sleeve. These people were so fierce earlier and were clearly ready to beat



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 211 Are You Going to Hit Us?

them up.

“Brother-in-law, they’re not beating us up anymore?” asked Su Yun in a tiny voice. She was still nervous.

Jiang Ning shook his head. “No idea. You ask him.”

Su Yun really went to look at Zhang Cheng, “Are...are you going to hit us?”

Zhang Cheng suddenly wanted to slap himself hard. He shook his head vigorously and replied, “I was just joking with you guys! I’m so happy that an old friend is here to see me, so why would I hit you? That would be rude of me!”

He took note that this young lady called Jiang Ning ‘brother-in-law’.

Now there was one more person he couldn’t offend.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

“That’s good,” Butler Zhao nodded. “Mr Jiang is Master Fu’s guest. So since he’s in Shengcheng, then he should be well taken care of.”

He smiled and said, “Mr Jiang, could you come with me to have tea at the Club?”

“I still have a few more friends I haven’t visited yet.” Jiang Ning glanced at Butler Zhang and pointed to Su Yun as he said, “This sister of mine is going to start university in Shengcheng this year so I thought of coming over first to let her get to know a few friends first. That way, we’ll avoid unnecessary misunderstandings in the future.”

The implication of these words were very clear. Zhang Cheng’s pupils instantly narrowed.

As he had predicted, Jiang Ning was warning them that this young lady was one of his. Anyone who dared to touch her could prepare to dig his own grave.

Since he dared to bring Su Yun along, it meant that he wasn’t worried that Zhang Cheng and the rest wouldn’t get the message.



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 212: Accidentally Becoming a Legend

Butler Zhao nodded. “But of course. She will feel at home in Shengcheng, you don’t have to worry.”

“Mr Jiang, I’ll go with you to visit your other friends.”

Jiang Ning smiled and nodded.

Butler Zhao represented Master Fu, so going along with Jiang Ning meant a lot of things. Now Su Yun wasn’t just a sister of Jiang Ning’s, but also someone tied to Master Fu. Who would still dare to touch Su Yun?

Besides Jiang Ning’s terrifying power, one would also have to think about whether he dared to offend Master Fu within Shengcheng.

Zhang Cheng dragged his injured leg along and sent Jiang Ning and gang out of the ward. He realized that his head was all covered in sweat, and he couldn’t even feel the pain of his wounds.

“Boss, how did Master Fu and Jiang Ning...”

Lin Wu’s throat dried up and didn’t dare to talk about taking revenge against Jiang



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 212: Accidentally Becoming a Legend

Ning anymore.

Jiang Ning had dared to come to Shengcheng, and Master Fu had even arranged for Butler Zhao to pick him up. This was really weird.

Was Jiang Ning working for Master Fu?

That was impossible!

“Don’t ask what you shouldn’t ask!” hissed Zhang Cheng.

He had more questions in his heart than Lin Wu. He was very sure that Jiang Ning didn’t work for Master Fu. So there was only one conclusion: Jiang Ning was so powerful that Master Fu was wary of him.

Master Fu was treating Jiang Ning like they were on par with one another, and didn’t treat Jiang Ning as a junior.

This was really scary!

Master Fu knew much more than they did. His knowledge and connections were much better than theirs, so it was likely that Jiang Ning was backed by someone really powerful!



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 212: Accidentally Becoming a Legend

Zhang Cheng narrowed his eyes and immediately gave orders, "Send a photo of that girl to everybody now! Make sure they remember, never touch this girl!"

He turned and his voice became louder, "Prick up your ears and listen carefully. NEVER touch this girl! Whoever dares to make any trouble can wait to die!"

Jiang Ning and Butler Zhao brought Su Yun around to the rest of the bosses, and all of them were also frightened and nervous after their visit.

After finding out that Jiang Ning was here just to tell them that Su Yun was his sister and didn't intend to finish them off, all of them quickly sent out instructions to the rest of Shengcheng's illegal circle to never bother Su Yun.

Su Yun had no idea that she had already become a legend in Shengcheng before even starting school here.

After he was done visiting his friends, Jiang Ning got Brother Gou to bring Su Yun round the universities while he got into Butler Zhao's car and headed straight for Masquerade Club.



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 212: Accidentally Becoming a Legend

Butler Zhao was slightly surprised. He had seen so many people in his life, but he had never seen someone as steady as Jiang Ning.

He wasn't worried about whether it was safe in Shengcheng at all and let Brother Gou take the young lady out to have fun. He had also just gotten into Butler Zhao's car as if he wasn't the slightest bit worried about whether Shengcheng had laid any traps for him.

"This incredible confidence comes from incredible ability," thought Butler Zhao to himself.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 213 Seeing Master Fu

Jiang Ning got Brother Gou to bring Su Yun round the universities while he hopped into Butler Zhao's car.

Everything that happened was hard to believe. Even Brother Gou found it difficult to believe, never mind someone who had never seen this sort of thing like Su Yun.

All those big bosses of Shengcheng's illegal circle who used to be so high and mighty were all like obedient kittens earlier.

He remembered clearly that one of the bosses had come to Donghai before Jiang Ning appeared, and everyone was so nervous as if they were about to fight a monster!

And now?

Jiang Ning hadn't even done anything, and didn't even say anything threatening. But Zhang Cheng and the other bosses had such fearful faces, this scene left a deep impression on Brother Gou.

"Master Fu..." mumbled Brother Gou. "Even Master Fu is so polite to Big Boss."

His worship of Jiang Ning had reached an



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 213 Seeing Master Fu

even greater level now. Jiang Ning was his god now!

“Brother Gou, who on earth is my brother-in-law exactly?”

Su Yun was even more curious. This man who supposedly married into the family seemed to be very powerful.

Everyone was polite to him, and they seemed to revere him even.

“I heard he’s from Beggars’ Sect.”

Brother Gou didn’t know Jiang Ning’s actual identity. He had only heard from Huang Yuming that Jiang Ning used to be homeless like him, and shared a bun with him back then. Nobody knew if that story was real or not, but that was what Huang Yuming told everyone.

“What? Beggars’ Sect?”

Su Yun covered her mouth with her hand as she looked at Brother Gou in shock and disbelief. “Yuzhen seriously married a homeless man?”

She had heard Su Hong mention this but Su Yun didn’t believe it. She didn’t expect



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 213 Seeing Master Fu

Brother Gou to say the same thing. He worked very closely with Jiang Ning.

“AHEM.”

Brother Gou coughed, “You’ll have to ask Boss Yuzhen about that.”

He knew that while Jiang Ning was terrifyingly domineering in front of other people, he was really obedient in front of Lin Yuzhen.

He turned and drove into one of Shengcheng’s universities and parked the car.

“Come along, let’s have a look at this university.”

Su Yun nodded and hopped out of the car. It was her first time at a university campus and it did feel different. But right now, she was more curious about Jiang Ning than university.

Meanwhile.

Butler Zhao’s car had already reached Masquerade Club.

Butler Zhao opened the car door when the



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 213 Seeing Master Fu

car stopped. “Mr Jiang, this way please.”

“Butler Zhao, you’re too polite,” Jiang Ning nodded but wasn’t arrogant. He got out of the car and looked up at the large signboard. The words ‘Masquerade Club’ were written with such energy. This wasn’t written by an ordinary person.

“A friend of Master Fu wrote this.”

Butler Zhao noticed Jiang Ning looking at the signboard and smiled as he explained where it came from.

“This calligraphy is not bad.”

Jiang Ning just nodded. He didn’t say that he had seen this calligraphy before.

After going in with Butler Zhao, Jiang Ning couldn’t help but nod in approval at the way this club was decorated.

It didn’t look cheap or old fashioned. On the contrary, the décor was quaint and tasteful, so it felt very elegant.

There were different flowers on both sides and they bloomed towards each other. The carved wooden beams were very intricately done, and there was a very



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 213 Seeing Master Fu

grand look to the place.

In the middle of the courtyard was a small pavilion and a manmade mountain with water flowing down. This was supposed to be a club, but it really looked more like a retirement village in the mountains.

Master Fu seemed to be someone who understood a lot about life. But how many people could actually understand Master Fu?

Jiang Ning continued to walk and look around. Butler Zhao didn't say anything but continued to observe him.

He received many guests everyday, but there were very few who could really understand the meaning behind this décor and the elegance of this place. He could sense that Jiang Ning could understand and could appreciate it.

“Master Fu is in the backyard.”

Butler Zhao stretched an arm out to show the way as he led Jiang Ning to the door leading to the backyard.

“Thank you.”

Jiang Ning walked in, but Butler Zhao waited by the door and didn't go in.

Master Fu wanted to have tea and chat with Jiang Ning, so he didn't have the right to listen by the side.

Jiang Ning walked in and the first thing he saw was the manmade lake. A gentle breeze blew across and sent ripples across the surface of the lake, making one feel at peace instantly.

There was a man around fifty years old seated in the pavilion in the lake. He was making tea with a practiced hand and the fragrance of the tea was strong enough for Jiang Ning to smell it.

“I've just invited Mr Jiang over without making any prior arrangements, I hope you're not offended.”

Master Fu looked up but didn't get up.

He was senior enough, so he didn't need to get up to welcome Jiang Ning. It didn't bother Jiang Ning either.

Master Fu looked very amiable and



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 214 Not a Friend

peaceable, and he always had a gentle smile on his face. Anyone who saw him for the first time would never imagine that he was that terrifying man who had control over all of Tianhai's illegal circles for more than twenty years!

Jiang Ning smiled. "Coming here to have tea is my honor."

He walked into the pavilion and sat down without waiting to be asked. He narrowed his eyes and smelled the tea. "It is really good tea. Looks like I've come at a good time."

Broken Sword was standing not too far away. His expression was icy and was as cold as an iceberg.

He didn't sit with them and stood where he was. He was here as a bodyguard.

Master Fu poured a cup of tea for Jiang Ning and stretched his hand out to ask Jiang Ning to drink up. Jiang Ning nodded and gently rapped his fingers twice on the table to express his gratitude.

He drank the warm tea. It was really good tea, and it was likely to be a rare type of tea. Someone without enough experience



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 214 Not a Friend

in brewing tea might not be able to make it taste so good.

“Mr Jiang, you’ve achieved a lot at a young age,” said Master Fu with a smile as he continued making tea. “Even a person who doesn’t go out like myself has heard all about it.”

“Oh? I hope you didn’t hear too many bad things about me?” replied Jiang Ning.

“I don’t suppose anyone dares to say anything bad about you now, no?” asked Master Fu in return.

“That’s hard to say,” Jiang Ning took another sip and smiled. “But anyone who says anything bad about me only gets that chance once in his lifetime.”

Master Fu smiled and didn’t say anymore. He continued making tea, pouring tea and drinking it.

The two of them continued silently like this for ten whole minutes.

After pouring water over the tea again and again, the fragrance slowly faded.

Master Fu didn’t ask Jiang Ning anything



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 214 Not a Friend

about Donghai's illegal circle, or about Zhou Hua or about Shengcheng. Jiang Ning didn't ask either, and he didn't even greet Master Fu. He just treated the man in front of him as a tea drinking old man that he didn't know.

They finished the tea.

Master Fu looked up and started to look seriously at Jiang Ning.

He didn't say anything and just nodded. He didn't hide the approval and admiration in his eyes.

When Jiang Ning met his eyes, his gaze was peaceful and there was a smile on his face. Nobody could tell what these two were really thinking inside.

"Come and have tea here when you're free to come to Shengcheng," Master Fu finally broke the silence. "I hear from Broken Sword that you're afraid that you might become addicted to the tea, but I believe you're too worried about that."

He didn't say that Jiang Ning wouldn't have the chance to become addicted. Or rather, even if he became addicted, there was more than enough tea for Jiang Ning



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 214 Not a Friend

to drink. This wily old fox always said things halfway, and the other half was anybody's guess.

"Then I won't bother being polite," said Jiang Ning with a smile as he got up. "I'll come by another day."

After that, he nodded at Broken Sword and turned to leave.

Master Fu looked at the cup and was silent for a long time. The smile on his face slowly faded and became rather cold and distant. He quietly said, "He's not a friend."

Broken Sword's eyes narrowed violently.

"Then why didn't you let me kill him?"

That was definitely a good opportunity. Even if he got severely injured or even died, he would have been able to kill Jiang Ning.

"But he's not a foe either," added on Master Fu.

Chapter 215 Tipping the Balance

Master Fu could sense that Jiang Ning wasn't coming after him.

Since he wasn't a foe, then even if he wasn't a friend, Master Fu didn't have to worry for the time being.

Jiang Ning had been so aggressive and so powerful. He was so strong that Master Fu became a little wary of him. He had lived for so many years and had never felt this way before.

Broken Sword didn't say anything.

All these years, Jiang Ning was the only one who made Master Fu tread so carefully.

"Since he's not from the north, then we still have time," Master Fu sighed. "That wild beast next door has been watching us for many years now."

Broken Sword responded coldly, "They wouldn't dare to set foot in Tianhai!"

"Hoho, they didn't dare in the past because both sides are at an equilibrium. We have someone backing us, they have someone backing them. I have you by my side, and he has highly skilled fighters by his side



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 215 Tipping the Balance

too. You killed two of his closest brothers, and he has been waiting to take revenge for five years now.”

Master Fu laughed. “But how long more can we remain at this equilibrium?”

“Are you saying that Jiang Ning will tip the balance?”

Master Fu didn’t say anymore.

This equilibrium was bound to be broken sooner or later. The state of Tianhai was a huge piece of land along the coast and it was so profitable. Master Fu had controlled this place for more than twenty years and earned so much money for that family, so naturally, many others wanted a piece of it too.

And now the family that backed Master Fu wasn’t in a good situation. So those who didn’t dare to make a move previously weren’t so worried now.

He was most worried that Jiang Ning was here for that reason. But that didn’t seem to be the case, at least for the time being.

The pressure in Master Fu’s heart was lighter now.



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 215 Tipping the Balance

The equilibrium was going to be broken, and the one who would tip the balance would most likely be Jiang Ning. So when that happened, even if Jiang Ning wasn't a foe, those who were enemies of Master Fu for many years would definitely make an aggressive attack.

There would probably be a bloodbath when that happened.

Master Fu didn't speak anymore, and Broken Sword didn't continue asking.

The two of them had known each other for more than thirty years and were willing to sacrifice their life for each other. They wouldn't even frown if they had to die for one another.

An enemy?

If an enemy came, he was going to kill him!

He was going to kill them all!

His broken sword was ready long ago!

.....

Brother Gou brought Su Yun around



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 215 Tipping the Balance

several universities, and even Brother Gou wanted to attend university after seeing so many of them. But he knew that he wasn't academically inclined, and just finishing middle school had used up all his brain cells.

After coming out of the school, Brother Gou got a call from Jiang Ning and they were supposed to wait there for him.

"You wait here for a while, I'll buy drinks for us," said Brother Gou with a smile.

"Thanks Brother Gou!" Su Yun was a nice girl with a good personality and was polite to Brother Gou. She never treated him like he was Jiang Ning's subordinate.

The sun was getting a little bright. Brother Gou's skin was thick and rough so this bit of sun couldn't do anything to him, but Su Yun's young skin couldn't take it.

There was a thin layer of sweat on her forehead and she used her hand to push some hair behind her ear as the wind blew. Her slightly pinkish face looked both innocent and adorable.

"Young lady, are you waiting for someone?"



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 215 Tipping the Balance

There was a cheeky voice from behind. Su Yun turned around to look at him, frowned slightly and ignored him.

“Waiting for your boyfriend? Don’t tell me you’re waiting for me?”

A few young men walked towards her. It was clear that these men weren’t students from the way they dressed and looked. They had probably purposely hung around the school to pick up some girls.

Su Yun didn’t bother looking at them anymore and ignored them.

She had run into such hooligans in school before, and reacting to them made them hang around you even more.

“You’re a student at this business school, aren’t you?”

The hooligans grinned as they looked Su Yun up and down. Su Yun was well covered up, but her figure was still obvious.

More importantly, her pure and youthful face was one that these hooligans seldom saw. “We’re students from this school too. Why don’t we get to know one another



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 215 Tipping the Balance

better? We can bring you out.”



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"Can you move aside?"

Su Yun frowned, "You're being very rude."

"Hahaha! Rude?" One of the hooligans laughed loudly. "Let me be even ruder."

He suddenly laughed maliciously and said in a lecherous tone of voice, "Can I invite you to sleep with me? HAHAHA!"

"Get lost!" Su Yun's face reddened in anger. "Shameless boys!"

"Who the hell do you think you're yelling at now?" That hooligan instantly became angry. "How dare you yell at me? I'll give you a chance now, have a drink with me now, or else..."

"Or else what?"

Brother Gou narrowed his eyes and walked over with drinks in his hands.

He didn't think much of these third grade hooligans.

Even before he went through Jiang Ning's training, he could fight ten of them by himself in Donghai.



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 216 You're Dead Meat

“Oh my, someone’s here.” The hooligans walked towards him. “This bitch here has offended me, so what, you’re going to stand up for her?”

Brother Gou laughed.

He opened one bottle of water in his hands and passed it to Su Yun. “Have some water first. It’s a little warm, we just need to wait for a while more.”

Jiang Ning was already on his way.

“Bloody hell! Are you tired of living? I’m talking to you!”

The leader of the hooligans rolled up his sleeve and got ready to fight.

Su Yun obediently took two steps back. Brother Gou finally turned to glance at them. This bunch didn’t need Jiang Ning to deal with them.

“You’re asking for it!”

The hooligans were angered when they saw the disdain and mocking in Brother Gou’s eyes. There were four of them in total, so they weren’t afraid of just one man.



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 216 You're Dead Meat

They immediately dashed forward and raised their fists, "Beat him to death!"

BAM! BAM! BAM! BAM!

These four punches were followed by howls. All four hooligans collapsed on the ground and clutched their stomachs. They could barely any sound now.

They felt like their intestines had been knotted up. The pain made them break out into cold sweat.

Brother Gou looked down at them, "Bunch of useless idiots, not afraid of anyone, huh?"

"Why you..."

The leader of the hooligans snarled. His face was all red and the pain made his entire body tremble. He never imagined that a person's punch could be this powerful.

"Do you know...do you know who my boss is? Stay here...and wait if you dare!"

Brother Gou threw him a glance. He really had to stay here. Jiang Ning asked him to wait here.



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 216 You're Dead Meat

He couldn't be bothered with them and behaved like these pieces of trash didn't exist. That hooligan immediately took his phone out. He was still sprawled on the ground, but he looked threatening as he yelled, "You're dead meat!"

Since this guy wanted to play hero in front of the girl, this hooligan was going to make him regret it!

The hooligans finally managed to get up and stood a short distance away to wait for backup. When they saw how Brother Gou and Su Yun were still standing there leisurely while drinking water and snacking, they became even angrier than before.

Soon enough, two vans came and braked violently. A dozen burly and muscular men hopped out of the vans.

The leader of the hooligans immediately became excited.

"Brother Si! It's those two! I told them your name, but they didn't care and even said so what! How could I take this lying down!"

The leader continued angrily, "I was angry, so I tried to fight him. But that guy can



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 216 You're Dead Meat

fight, so I had to call you over!”

All the men who came were very aggressive and filled with a murderous air. The moment they heard that these two had been so flippant, their expressions darkened.

Brother Si smiled coldly as he walked over. It would be an embarrassment if he didn't break their legs!

But after he came closer and saw Su Yun's face, his heart nearly stopped.

Where had he seen this face before?

His impression was that he had to run if he ever saw this face and he must never offend her, otherwise he would die even if he knelt down and begged for mercy!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Brother Si's expression changed and he stopped walking.

"Brother Si, it's them!" the hooligans started shouting from behind again when they saw that Brother Si had stopped walking. "They don't have any regard for Brother Si, so if we don't teach them a lesson today, how are we going to hold our heads up high in the future?"

Brother Si didn't say anything. He took his phone out and looked for a photo.

He looked up at Su Yun, then back down at the photo.

His expression completely changed.

"Brother Si, let that little bitch see what happens if she offends you!"

Brother Si didn't say anything and his face was slightly pale.

He looked seriously at the photo, then back at Su Yun. He kept gulping and the hand holding the phone was even beginning to tremble.

"Brother Si, let me do it! I'll slap them a few times first!"



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 217 Miss Su

The hooligans behind him were getting impatient.

Now there were so many of them, so they were much more confident.

Brother Gou and Su Yun were still very calm. In fact, Brother Gou even felt like laughing.

Just a dozen of them?

In the past, he wouldn't be able to guarantee anything. But now, even if another dozen appeared, he would send all of them sprawling to the ground.

"May I ask," Brother Si suddenly looked warily at Su Yun and said, "Is your surname Su?"

Su Yun froze for a while, then nodded.

The moment she nodded, Brother Si understood what was going on.

He took a deep breath.

"Brother Si, why are you still bothering to talk to her? If you want to play with her, I'll pull off all her clothes and throw her to yo-
...AHHH!"



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 217 Miss Su

Before that hooligan could finish his sentence, Brother Si spun around and slapped him hard on the face.

PAK!

It sounded especially crisp.

“You little motherfucker! You can die by yourself, don’t drag me down with you!” cursed Brother Si loudly. “You think you can afford to offend Miss Su? You actually dared to anger her? I’m going to kill you!”

He gave a roar and the men behind him immediately surrounded those hooligans and started beating them up.

“Brother Si! No! Hit them, not us! AHH!”

“I’m beating YOU guys!” yelled Brother Si. “Whack them harder! Otherwise they won’t learn!”

Damn it! He was so glad that he had cleverly saved Su Yun’s photo in his phone so that he could remind himself to stay faraway from this girl. He couldn’t afford to offend her at all.

His big boss was wary of her because apparently she was connected to Master



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 217 Miss Su

Fu. So who would dare to offend her?

Unless you felt that you had lived on this earth for too long.

But his useless followers had nearly done him in today.

If Master Fu found out, he didn't even need the Grim Reaper to appear. He could just say the word and he would have to get out of Shengcheng.

"Whack them! Whack them silly!"

"I'm going to kill you for offending Miss Su!"

The men started beating them up even more aggressively than before. The four of them were close to tears. They had called these men over themselves but now they were the ones getting beaten up, and they were getting beaten up so fiercely too.

The howls continued but Brother Si was still perspiring.

Su Yun was completely floored.

What was going on?



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 217 Miss Su

Why were these people...hitting their own folks?

Miss Su? When did she become Miss Su?

“Miss Su, I’m really sorry for not watching over my men! Please forgive me, please forgive me!”

Brother Si bowed low and put on the politest smile he could, “I’ll teach these punks a lesson and make sure they don’t dare to offend you ever again!”

Su Yun didn’t know what to do. She turned to look at Brother Gou.

Brother Gou snorted. “At least you know what you’re doing!”

“If anyone even touched a single hair on Miss Su’s head, even your big boss has to die!”

He didn’t mince his words.

Chapter 218 Wily Old Fox

That one sentence was enough for Brother Si to feel his hair stand on end. He quickly waved his hands about in fear, "I wouldn't dare! I wouldn't dare!"

He turned around and yelled, "Why are you still standing there? Miss Su is angry! Whack them! Whack them hard!"

The howls grew louder and they started attracting attention and Su Yun was afraid of trouble.

"En-enough," said Su Yun in a small voice. "Stop hitting them, they're going to die at this rate..."

"Stop!"

Brother Si clenched his fist immediately. He saw that one of his men hadn't stopped yet, so he ran to him and kicked him aside. "Miss Su said to stop! Are you bloody deaf?"

Su Yun had no idea what was going on at all. But these people seemed terribly afraid of her.

But she was just a student.

A dozen men were now standing



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 218 Willy Old Fox

obediently and nervously in front of Su Yun, like elementary school children who were caught doing something naughty. They didn't even dare to breathe too loudly.

“Er...”

She didn't know what to do, so she could only look at Brother Gou.

“Get lost! If I see you again, I guarantee none of you can remain standing!”

“Yes yes yes!”

Brother Si quickly nodded and bowed.

“Thank you Miss Su for forgiving us, thank you for being so magnanimous!”

He quickly dragged the hooligans away and ran for his life.

He was going back to teach these idiots a lesson, otherwise they'd be the death of him some day!

Su Yun watched as they left and was still very confused.

“Brother Gou, do I look very scary?”

Brother Gou had a stern expression as he



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 218 Willy Old Fox

nodded. "I'm afraid you have already become a legend among the illegal circle of Shengcheng."

Jiang Ning had gone round to visit the bosses personally with Butler Zhao accompanying him to represent Master Fu. This was enough to make Shengcheng's illegal circle shudder. As long as none of them wanted to die, they wouldn't dare to touch Su Yun.

They wouldn't even be able to hide themselves in time.

Given how protective Jiang Ning was of his family, Brother Gou didn't even dare to imagine what might happen to anyone who dared to bully Su Yun.

BEEP BEEP!

A black car slowly drove over and stopped in front of Brother Gou and Su Yun.

Butler Zhao alighted and opened the car door. Jiang Ning got out of the car.

"Brother-in-law!"

Su Yun became excited when she saw Jiang Ning.



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 218 Willy Old Fox

Jiang Ning nodded. “Butler Zhao, thanks for today.”

“No worries. Do drop by whenever you’re free, you’re always welcome to have tea at the Club,” replied Butler Zhao with a face full of smiles as always.

He greeted Brother Gou and Su Yun, then left in the car.

If those men earlier saw Butler Zhao, they would have peed their pants.

“Brother-in-law! I was really amazing just now!” Su Yun fluttered her large eyes and said excitedly, “There were a dozen men who tried to bully Brother Gou just now, and I scared them off with a glare!”

Brother Gou just stared dumbfounded at her. This girl could really tell tall tales!

“So impressive?”

Jiang Ning glanced at Brother Gou.

“Uh huh! I never thought I was gifted in this area.” Su Yun was still excited. “Brother-in-law, do you think I’ve chosen the wrong path? Maybe I shouldn’t go to university and I should go join a gang.”



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 218 Wily Old Fox

Jiang Ning stared at her. So this girl was just pretending to be quiet and obedient?

She would rather join a gang than go to school?

He didn't care about that, but Lin Yuzhen would strangle him.

"Join a gang my foot. If you don't study properly, I'll teach you a lesson," Jiang Ning said to her with a serious face.

Su Yun stuck her tongue out and didn't dare to joke around anymore. She grinned and ran into the car.

"Big Boss, Master Fu is a wily old fox," Brother Gou finally spoke up. "When I brought Su Yun around, there were at least ten men watching us from afar."

"He didn't know what I was capable of before, so he had backup plans in place," replied Jiang Ning calmly. "But now he knows."

Jiang Ning had achieved his aim by coming to visit Shengcheng.

Obviously he hadn't come to bring Su Yun around the universities. That was just an excuse.

After coming here to see the man who controlled Tianhai for twenty over years, Jiang Ning finally understood how Master Fu had been able to do it.

It wasn't only because he had an extremely powerful and vicious killer, Broken Sword, by his side. It was more because Master Fu himself was a wily old fox. He was sly, cruel and very scheming.

The two of them had met up and barely said anything while just drinking tea, but everything was clear to them.

Jiang Ning knew what Master Fu was thinking about, and Master Fu also understood that Jiang Ning wasn't going up against him for the time being.

But just because Jiang Ning wasn't a foe, it didn't mean that Jiang Ning was a friend. And since Jiang Ning wasn't a friend, then he could be made use of.



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 219 Not a Single One Will Survive

Jiang Ning narrowed his eyes in car as he thought to himself, “No wonder those fellows in the north just kept their eye on Tianhai but never stepped in for the last twenty odd years.”

It had been difficult to maintain order here because of this reason.

But now, Jiang Ning was here.

Fei and Huang Yuming had started taking action in the north, so the effects of those actions should be apparent soon.

Jiang Ning didn't bother thinking too much about it. As long as Fei was in charge, he didn't have to worry.

“Brother-in-law?”

Su Yun thought that Jiang Ning was angry since he didn't say anything after stepping into the car.

She looked cautiously at Jiang Ning, “I was just kidding earlier. I'll study hard and get into a good university!”

Jiang Ning turned and looked at her. “Up to you, you're not studying for my sake.”



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 219 Not a Single One Will Survive

Su Yun was a bit taken aback, then she pouted and whined, “Why do you bear grudges so easily?”

“If Yuzhen jokes around with you, would you be angry too?” she asked softly.

“That’s not the same,” replied Jiang Ning directly. “I won’t be angry no matter what she does.”

“Why?” Su Yun couldn’t help but ask.

“Because she’s my wife,” replied Jiang Ning calmly.

Su Yun didn’t know what to say. She couldn’t argue against this.

But there weren’t many men who pampered their wives like that, right?

“You’ve looked at the universities and you know what you want, so study hard after you go back,” Jiang Ning looked hard at this young lady, afraid that her personality had become wild after having fun for the last two days. “If your results aren’t good enough, I won’t bring you out next time.”

Su Yun’s eyes lit up.



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 219 Not a Single One Will Survive

So if she did well, Jiang Ning would bring her out to play again?

“It’s a deal!”

She stuck her pinky out and wanted to hook pinkies with Jiang Ning.

“I don’t do childish things like that.”

Jiang Ning ignored her and closed his eyes to rest.

After they returned to Donghai, Jiang Ning got Brother Gou to send Su Yun home, then called the other wolves to gather at the training course.

A huge storm was on its way, but Brother Gou and the rest hadn’t reached his requirements fast enough.

The thirty of them were completely different from how they were just a few months ago.

The air around them was different. Their eyes were sharp and were filled with murder.

“I heard that you’re reaching six minutes.”



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 219 Not a Single One Will Survive

Jiang Ning scanned their faces, and nobody dared to look proud of themselves.

Compared to Jiang Ning, they were way too weak.

“But I’m still not happy,” Jiang Ning stretched a hand out and pointed at Brother Gou. “You guys can ask him. How many of the skilled fighters of Shengcheng can he kill?”

Brother Gou didn’t dare to say anything.

He wasn’t afraid of those ordinary men who could fight. Even if he couldn’t kill them off, he wouldn’t lose to them. But Jiang Ning’s requirement wasn’t that they didn’t lose.

He wanted them to make sure they won!

“Do not think that just because you’ve improved a little, you can be complacent,” Jiang Ning’s tone of voice suddenly turned icy cold. “I can tell you, if you go into Shengcheng now, not a single one of you will survive!”

Chapter 220 Master Fu is Severely Ill

In that instant, Brother Gou and the rest narrowed their eyes and a cold air arose from behind them.

Jiang Ning wouldn't lie to them.

Even though it wasn't apparent on their faces, many of them had started to feel complacent before this.

After all, they had gone through several fights and never lost. In fact, they won gloriously!

This incredible ego boost had made them start to think that they were powerful enough.

But Jiang Ning had now splashed a huge tub of cold water on their faces and they immediately woke up.

"Broken Sword!" yelled Jiang Ning. "Even if all of you attack together, none of you would hold up against even one move!"

Brother Gou gulped.

They had already realized this that day when they followed Broken Sword.

"Now you know what level your



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 220 Master Fu is Severely Ill

capabilities are at?"

Jiang Ning could tell from their fallen expressions that these words woken them up from their dream.

"Gou!"

"Yes!"

Brother Gou stepped forward.

Jiang Ning threw a drawing at him. "Get the construction team to complete this in two days. The new training course will be stricter and harsher. Those who can't endure it can get lost."

He didn't say anymore. Once he threw the drawing down, he left.

The remaining men started feeling their blood rushing through their bodies again.

The flames that had been put out earlier were starting to rage once more.

They knew that Jiang Ning had done this for their good. He didn't want them to lose their lives just because they had become complacent, so now he had designed a new training course in hope that they



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 220 Master Fu is Severely Ill

could become stronger.

Even if the rest still didn't understand, Brother Gou knew that Jiang Ning wanted them to become thirty ferocious wolves who were strong enough to eat highly skilled fighters like Broken Sword alive!

"Brothers!"

"We're gonna fight it out!"

"We're giving it everything we have!"

.....

Meanwhile.

Shengcheng.

After Jiang Ning left, Master Fu disappeared.

Butler Zhao told everyone that Master Fu was suddenly severely ill, so he had to quietly recuperate and did not want to be disturbed by anyone.

In this short span of time, besides Master Fu, Broken Sword was also nowhere to be found.



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 220 Master Fu is Severely Ill

The two of them seemed to have vanished into thin air. Nobody in Shengcheng could find them at all.

The news spread as quickly as a virus.

There was even news from within Masquerade Club about how Master Fu had been poisoned and nearly died, while the assailant had been chopped into half by Broken Sword.

Zhang Cheng and the other bosses were more terrified than shocked at this news.

But since that was news from their informants, this news was likely to be true.

Hadn't Master Fu just met up with Jiang Ning? Why was he suddenly poisoned?

Or did Jiang Ning do it? That was impossible. The news they got was that the assailant was someone who worked for the club for many years, and Jiang Ning hadn't appeared then.

The bosses became panicky because all their best men had just been beaten up by Jiang Ning not long ago, and it was impossible for their broken limbs to heal so quickly.



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 220 Master Fu is Severely Ill

Without Master Fu to control the situation in Shengcheng, there was great pressure from outside the city.

“What’s going on? Did Butler Zhao say anything?” Zhang Cheng was extremely anxious. “How did Master Fu get poisoned? Who on earth did it?!”

Gao Fei clenched his teeth and his face paled. “Butler Zhao refuses to see anyone and Masquerade Club is temporarily closed. Someone said he saw Broken Sword escape with Master Fu in the middle of the night, like they were...trying to run from some enemy, and they were in a terrible hurry.”

Zhang Cheng’s face paled even further.

He knew that Master Fu had made plenty of enemies over the years, in particular that man in Linhai. Broken Sword had killed off two out of five brothers!

This feud had to be settled. Either side had to die.

That man was probably behind Master Fu’s poisoning. Now that Master Fu was on the brink of death, that man wouldn’t be able to hold back anymore.

“Call all our brothers together! We have to guard Shengcheng and guard our territories closely, so they can forget about going anywhere during this time!”

Zhang Cheng immediately gave out orders and his expression was stern.

“Shengcheng is now in great danger. Master Fu isn’t around, so that man is definitely going to make his move!”

That man was definitely going to take revenge after Broken Sword had killed off two of his brothers.

All these years, both sides had been secretly plotting and sending attacks to each other. This time, the other side managed to poison Master Fu, so they were definitely going to make an attack now.

Besides Zhang Cheng, all the other bosses also sent the same order out after getting this news.

To them, it was good enough to just hold on to their own territory.

Once Master Fu came back, nobody would be able to enter Shengcheng!



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 221 Being Made Use Of

Now the bosses suddenly realized how good their lives were under Master Fu.

Even though Master Fu had control over them, at least there was someone to look out for external dangers. Now that Master Fu wasn't around, all of them started to panic.

In an instant, everyone in Shengcheng's illegal circle was filled with fear.

One side was trying to recuperate as quickly as possible while the other side was making preparations for an attack to hit them anytime.

Jiang Ning had heard about this too.

But he merely laughed and called Master Fu a wily old fox.

Master Fu had been poisoned?

Jiang Ning wouldn't believe it. Even if there was really a traitor who had hidden himself near Master Fu for many years, there was no way Master Fu didn't know about it.

If he wanted to kill this traitor off, he could have let Broken Sword kill him a long time ago. Why would he allow himself to be



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 221 Being Made Use Of

poisoned?

So the only explanation was that Master Fu had purposely let this traitor stick around so that he could use him when necessary.

And quite apparently, the time had come.

And the time had come just after Jiang Ning met up with him.

“So he wants to make use of me to kill someone else. Master Fu is really good at this,” said Jiang Ning to himself. “Since he’s started the game, then it looks like I have no choice but to step in as well.”

He knew very well that Master Fu had started the game once he left Shengcheng.

Jiang Ning was already part of the game.

Jiang Ning sighed to himself on the sofa. This city of Shengcheng was a really interesting one.

“What are you dreaming about?” Lin Yuzhen noticed that Jiang Ning was sitting there in a daze and she wrinkled her nose. “I asked you how was Shengcheng, but



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 221 Being Made Use Of

you ignored me.”

“There’s nothing interesting in Shengcheng, Donghai is still better.”

Jiang Ning shrugged and just simply gave an answer. “None of the women there look prettier than you.”

Lin Yuzhen was about to say it was impossible that Donghai was better than Shengcheng, but she didn’t know how to respond to his second statement.

Did this guy only know how to tease her all the time?

Her face reddened and she glared at Jiang Ning for a long time before she finally managed to say, “You went just to look at women?”

Jiang Ning nearly choked on the water he was drinking.

Why was that Lin Yuzhen’s focus?!

“It’s time to knock off, let’s go home. I wonder what Mum is cooking tonight.”

Jiang Ning didn’t want to continue this topic with Lin Yuzhen.



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 221 Being Made Use Of

There was no way he could understand women's crazy thought process, even if he had been tested to be a super genius.

After they reached home, Lin Wen was still not back yet. He probably had to work overtime.

Su Yun was in the kitchen helping Su Mei and talking excitedly about everything she saw in Shengcheng.

"Third Aunt, Shengcheng is a really nice place and I've already thought of which university I want to attend!" said Su Yun animatedly. "I'll be going to school in Shengcheng in the future!"

"Since you've got a target, then you have to work hard," smiled Su Mei in return. "Don't let your parents down!"

"I won't let you down either!"

"That's right!"

When Su Mei heard the door, she knew Lin Yuzhen and Jiang Ning were back. She wiped her hands and walked out.

"Hungry?" she smiled. "Wash your hands, the food is ready. Yun'er cooked too."



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 221 Being Made Use Of

Lin Yuzhen was surprised.

Su Yun knew how to cook?



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

“Yuzhen, aren't you surprised?”

Su Yun poked a head out as if she expected Lin Yuzhen to be surprised. “I often help my mum with cooking, so I've learnt quite a bit.”

She turned to look at Jiang Ning and expected him to be surprised too. But Jiang Ning remained expressionless and obviously didn't care, and his gaze remained on Lin Yuzhen.

“You're amazing!” Lin Yuzhen sighed helplessly, “But my cooking...”

She knew what sort of cooking she had. When Su Mei was in the hospital all day with Lin Wen for physiotherapy, the dishes she cooked over those few days were terrible enough to poison a rat.

But Jiang Ning had actually eaten everything as if the food was delicious.

“Yuzhen,” Su Mei took the chance to throw in a comment. “You should learn how to cook when you have time. If a girl doesn't know how to cook, then how are you going to take care of your husband and children in future?”



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 222 If You Don't Like Him, I Will

Lin Yuzhen wanted to say that it was still early for her.

“From tomorrow onwards, you’re going to learn cooking from me every weekend. You’re going to learn to cook all the dishes that Jiang Ning likes to eat.”

Before Lin Yuzhen could speak, the queen of the house, Su Mei, had already given the order.

Lin Yuzhen’s face reddened. What was her mother driving at?

Was her mum getting her to serve Jiang Ning now?

She turned to look at Jiang Ning. There was a smile on his face and he looked all gleeful.

His plan to start from his mother-in-law was a very successful one!

Lin Yuzhen threw a glance at Lin Yuzhen, and she used her eyes to reply him, “Dream on!”

After dinner, Jiang Ning sat on the sofa to watch TV.



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 222 If You Don't Like Him, I Will

He had to sleep on the sofa again, but after what Su Mei said earlier, Jiang Ning was feeling more assured.

Lin Yuzhen and Su Yun went back to the room after bathing.

“Yuzhen?” asked Su Yun. “Can I ask you a question?”

“What is it?” replied Lin Yuzhen.

“Do you like Jiang Ning?”

Lin Yuzhen was a little stunned. She didn't know why Su Yun was asking her this question.

“I don't know,” Lin Yuzhen shook her head after a long time. “I think I like him a little, but I'm not sure.”

“What do you mean by you don't know?”

Su Yun was even more curious. “My brother-in-law is so amazing, any woman would like him!”

“Is he very amazing?” asked Lin Yuzhen.

After thinking about it, Jiang Ning did seem pretty amazing.



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 222 If You Don't Like Him, I Will

He had a lot of money – he had spent more than \$15 million on thirty BMWs as a gift to the men without even blinking an eye. He even said that she could make Lin Group go bankrupt and he was only concerned that she would be sad.

How rich was this guy?!

On top of that, he could really fight. Lin Yuzhen had never seen anyone who could fight better than Jiang Ning anyway. Besides, Jiang Ning only fought for her sake.

When she thought about this, Lin Yuzhen's face reddened. "Would any woman really like him?"

"Why not?"

Su Yun went straight to the point, "Yuzhen, if you don't like Jiang Ning, then I'll take him."

"Wha-?" Lin Yuzhen instantly panicked as if Su Yun was going to snatch something away from her.

Even though she had just said she wasn't sure if she liked Jiang Ning or not.



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 222 If You Don't Like Him, I Will

“I think Jiang Ning is soooo manly! He’s so cool! He exudes this amazing charm!”

“No!”

Lin Yuzhen panicked even harder. How could this young lady like Jiang Ning! “You can’t like him!”

“But why?”

Su Yun blinked. “You said you’re not even sure whether you like him or not, and aren’t you two in a fake marriage?”

Su Hong had mentioned this a long time ago, and given Su Yun’s intelligence, she could tell that Jiang Ning and Lin Yuzhen didn’t behave like husband and wife at all.

“Because...”

Lin Yuzhen’s face was all red but she couldn’t tell if she was feeling shy or if she was feeling anxious. “...because he’s my husband!”

Chapter 223 Envy

Su Yun stared at Lin Yuzhen and her mouth was slightly open.

After a long time, she spoke up, "But Yuzhen, you just said you might not like him!"

"But we're married," said Lin Yuzhen seriously. "He's my husband now, so you can't like him."

She was getting a little anxious. Su Yun was so young, when did she learn to like others?

And she even dared to say that she liked Jiang Ning!

"You terrible little girl! He's your brother-in-law!" Lin Yuzhen scoffed, "You can like anybody but him! If you say nonsense like this again, I'll tell your mum!"

Su Yun instantly became frantic.

"Yuzhen, don't do that!" Su Yun quickly begged for mercy. "I'm just teasing you, don't get me into trouble!"

Lin Yuzhen scoffed and didn't say anything.



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 223 Envy

Su Yun quickly started massaging her legs and saying nice things.

“Yuzhen, you like Jiang Ning, don’t you?”

Lin Yuzhen didn’t say anything.

“I can tell,” Su Yun started sounding like an adult, “If you like him, then you’d better hold on to him tightly. I won’t fight with you, at most I’ll just find a guy who’s half as good as Jiang Ning. But I can’t guarantee what other girls would do.”

Was there a man who was half as good as Jiang Ning?

Su Yun didn’t know, but she realized that her standards for finding a husband were going to become very high now.

This topic didn’t matter to the one who said these words, but as the one listening to this, Lin Yuzhen felt her heart tremble slightly.

Jiang Ning was so outstanding, so there must be a lot of girls who like him.

Girls who were prettier than her, with a better figure than her or even smarter than herself. Not like her, a girl who couldn’t



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 223 Envy

even cook.

Lin Yuzhen started to feel a little depressed now.

“Yuzhen?”

Su Yun realized she said the wrong thing when she saw Lin Yuzhen go into a daze and stuck her tongue out, “Jiang Ning said something to me on the way back today.”

“What?” asked Lin Yuzhen.

“He said that no matter what you do, he will never be angry with you.”

Lin Yuzhen felt her heart pound violently as she felt something like electricity pass through her in that instant, and a faint sweetness overwhelmed her heart.

“Feeling better now?” Su Yun sighed.

“Yuzhen, I really envy you.”

“What are you talking about?! You’re just a small kid! Turn off the lights and sleep!”

“What do you mean by I’m small? I’m just five years younger than you! And mine are bigger than yours!”



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 223 Envy

.....

Early the next morning.

Jiang Ning was used to waking up early in the morning, and the sofa wasn't very comfortable either.

He woke up to find two people in the kitchen and he was a little surprised.

"Mum?"

Jiang Ning called out and Su Mei smiled as she acknowledged his greeting. Then she said, "Yuzhen, take these out and let Jiang Ning eat first."

Lin Yuzhen was in the kitchen?

She actually woke up early!

Her face was a little red and she bit her lip gently as if she was a little embarrassed as she took the porridge out. She put a serious face on and said, "Why are you still standing there? Wash up and have breakfast!"

"You cooked this?"

Jiang Ning took a glance at it. With the



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 223 Envy

help of Su Mei, it looked much better than before.

“Are you going to eat it or not?” Lin Yuzhen glared at him.

“Of course!”

Jiang Ning ran into the bathroom. He was back at the table in less than a minute.

Lin Yuzhen had already ladled a bowl out for him and laid out the side dishes.

Jiang Ning was very pleased with this arrangement.

He really wanted to laugh, but he didn't dare to when he saw how serious Lin Yuzhen looked.

Su Mei had given the order yesterday and Lin Yuzhen actually listened to her? That didn't seem like her.

“When she has time, I'll get Yuzhen to cook breakfast for you,” said Su Mei as she walked out of the kitchen. “It's high time she learnt to cook.”

“MUUUUM~” Lin Yuzhen pouted. She really regretted waking up so early and saying



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 223 Envy

that she wanted to try making breakfast. Now she couldn't get out of it.

“Sure, Mum can sleep more, that's good for your skin. Yuzhen can take over from now.”

Jiang Ning nodded very seriously.

Lin Yuzhen glared at him but Su Mei just laughed.

After breakfast, Lin Yuzhen didn't say a single word on the way to work. She seemed a little angry.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Chapter 224 Great Change

“My cooking is very bad now, but I’ll improve,” said Lin Yuzhen after a very long while.

Jiang Ning nodded. He never said Lin Yuzhen’s cooking was bad.

After they reached the office, Lin Yuzhen got busy. The latest two projects were focused on entering Shengcheng’s market.

The two companies she was working with were both big players in Shengcheng, so working with them was a great opportunity for Lin Group to enter Shengcheng and Lin Yuzhen viewed them as her most important projects.

Jiang Ning had told her before to go ahead and do whatever she wanted, and she didn’t need to consider the consequences.

He would always be there for her.

Jiang Ning’s phone rang and after he looked at it, he glanced over at Lin Yuzhen buried in work.

“Looks like Lin Group’s road into Shengcheng isn’t going to be very smooth.”



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 224 Great Change

He said this very calmly and wasn't bothered by it at all.

Nurturing his wife was a meaningful thing in itself. Besides, Lin Yuzhen was so adorable.

As for the great change that was going to happen in Shengcheng, Jiang Ning couldn't be bothered at all.

Meanwhile, in Shengcheng.

Zhang Cheng still had one arm in a cast but he was sprawled on the floor. There were five bright red finger marks on his face, as if his humiliation was etched on his face.

"Admit defeat now?"

The man seated in front was icy faced. He was like a wild beast who was ready to bite Zhang Cheng's head anytime.

"Let go of our boss! Come for me if you dare!" roared Lin Wu angrily. But he couldn't even stand properly, so he was roaring as he knelt on the floor.

PFFFT!



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 224 Great Change

Without any hesitation, a sharp knife instantly stabbed through Lin Wu's chest and blood spurted out everywhere.

"So noisy!" That icy faced man had a cold glint in his eye. "Drag him out and throw him into the sea to be fish food!"

"Brother Wu!"

Gao Fei's eyes immediately reddened and he tried to rush over, but someone slapped him onto the floor again and stepped on his back so that he couldn't move.

"Stop it! Stop hitting my men!" Zhang Cheng roared angrily. His face was contorted as someone stepped on him and Zhang Cheng couldn't struggle free. "You can kill me if you want! Why touch my brothers!"

"All you want is my territory, isn't it? Dream on!"

Zhang Cheng smiled threateningly, "Once Master Fu comes back, you're dead meat!"

BAM!

One foot kicked Zhang Cheng's face. He immediately howled in pain, and his skull



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 224 Great Change

was going to break.

“You think that old man dares to come back?”

The icy faced man had a look of disdain, “He can’t even save himself now!”

“Zhang Cheng, it’s better to go along with what will benefit you at this point in time. Follow me obediently and be one of my dogs, I won’t treat you any worse than that old thing.” The icy faced man narrowed his eyes, “Don’t tell me you want to watch your men all die for nothing?”

“You...”

Zhang Cheng’s eyes were bloodshot. He had just watched Lin Wu get killed in front of his eyes, and the anger in his heart was raging.

He never thought that Lu Qian would have come so quickly and so aggressively.

In just three days, he had already taken over two bosses’ territory and now it was Zhang Cheng’s turn.

“Don’t think you can just take without giving!”



Screenshot is done

Tap to view

Chapter 224 Great Change

The man next to Lu Qian wasn't very tall, but his bulky muscles were like the roots of an old tree. Nobody knew how much terrifying and explosive strength was in those muscles.

Explosive Dragon!

He was one of Lu Qian's closest men. He was a cruel and ferocious man. And he was the one who just killed Lin Wu!

He had lost patience and stepped hard on Zhang Cheng's head while clenching his fists tightly, "Boss, don't bother talking to him anymore. If he doesn't want to follow us, then I'll smash his brain!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Explosive Dragon was about to swing his fists.

“Stop!”

“Stop it!”

Gao Fei and the rest tried to protect Zhang Cheng but none of them could move.

“No need to be in such a hurry,” said Lu Qian.

He looked down at Zhang Cheng, “You’ve got guts, but in this day and age, you can’t survive if you just have guts. You get what I mean?”

Zhang Cheng was panting heavily.

Explosive Dragon’s fists nearly landed on his head. The terrifying pressure that Zhang Cheng felt made him feel like it was difficult to breathe.

He was sure that if Lu Qian hadn’t suddenly spoken, Explosive Dragon’s fist would have smashed his brain to mush.

Lu Qian got up and looked around. Not a single one of Zhang Cheng’s men could still stand.

Before coming, he was quite curious as to how

Zhang Cheng's best men had all landed in hospital. Not just Zhang Cheng – the two bosses he took the territories from were also in this state. He had no idea what happened to them. Had they just gone to war with each other?

"I'll still need someone in Shengcheng, so Zhang Cheng, this is your chance. Think about it carefully."

Lu Qian then left.

He walked to the door and stopped, then turned around to face Zhang Cheng. There was a mysterious smile on his face. "Honestly speaking, I'm looking forward to that old thing coming back more than you. And that's because I...really want to kill him myself."

Zhang Cheng trembled all over.

Lu Qian and his men had left, but Zhang Cheng still felt that his body was very cold. He felt like he had fallen into an iceberg and the cold penetrated his body.

It was too terrifying!

The leader of Linhai's illegal circle, Lu Qian was

a tyrant! He wasn't like Master Fu, a man who stayed well hidden and acted peacefully.

Lu Qian's three closest men, Explosive Dragon, Ice Dragon and Blood Dragon, were powerful on their own. It was said that if the three of them joined hands, they were as powerful as Broken Sword.

What were they going to do now?

"Boss!"

"Boss, are you alright?!"

Gao Fei and the others ran over to help Zhang Cheng up, and their faces were all red from fury.

They had never suffered such humiliation before.

Even Jiang Ning wasn't so cruel and just killed people on the spot.

"Brother Wu..." Gao Fei gulped and couldn't help crying. "He's dead!"

Zhang Cheng clenched his fists tightly.

He had gone through plenty of fights in the illegal circle. But this was the first time someone had just killed his way in and humiliated him like this!

But what could he do about it?

"Master Fu..."

Gao Fei's lips trembled when he saw that Zhang Cheng had fallen silent. "Is Master Fu never coming back?"

If Master Fu came back, then they would have confidence. With that grim reaper by Master Fu's side, then even if Lu Qian's brothers joined hands, they still might not win.

But now Master Fu wasn't around, so who was going to stop Lu Qian?

"If Master Fu doesn't come back..." Zhang Cheng clenched his teeth. "I'll never bow to that asshole from another state!"

Lu Qian had killed off his brothers and he even wanted Zhang Cheng to submit to him.

Zhang Cheng would rather die than to give in!

"Two of the other bosses have already surrendered!" shouted Gao Fei. "If you don't give in, then our brothers will all die!"

"Then die!" roared Zhang Cheng angrily as he grabbed Gao Fei's collar. "If you are afraid to die, then get out of here!"

Gao Fei fell back onto the floor and clenched his fists, "I'm not afraid to die! I'm going to avenge Brother Wu!"

Take revenge?

He could only shout now. In front of Lu Qian, he wasn't even able to fight back. If those three highly skilled fighters wanted to kill him, it would be as easy as slaughtering a chicken.

If Master Fu wasn't around in Tianhai, then who could go up against Lu Qian?

"Jiang Ning!"

Zhang Cheng suddenly looked up with a start.

“Jiang Ning?”

Gao Fei and the rest froze for a while. They were equally terrified of this name.

All of them had broken arms and legs precisely because they had offended Jiang Ning!

Jiang Ning was just as terrifying as Lu Qian.

“Boss, but Jiang Ning...”

“At least he doesn’t simply kill others!” said Zhang Cheng through clenched teeth.

These days the illegal circle just wanted to earn enough to make ends meet. If they could stop engaging in illegal activities, they would. Nobody wanted to have blood on their hands.

It had been many years since even Zhang Cheng had seen someone just kill another person just like that.

After a certain age, he grew afraid of certain things as well.

If they hadn’t tried to attack Donghai and thereby offended Jiang Ning, then Jiang Ning would have left them alone.

Compared to Lu Qian, at least Jiang Ning was humane.

“Let’s go to Donghai!”

Zhang Cheng made this decision immediately.

Even if he died, he would never bow to the illegal circle outside of his state.

Moreover, he could sense that something had really happened to Master Fu and wasn’t coming back anymore. Otherwise there was no way for Lu Qian to have taken over two bosses and there was still no movement from Master Fu.

There was no way he would allow his enemy, Lu Qian, to do whatever he wanted in Tianhai’s illegal circles.

How could it be?

Zhang Cheng didn’t hesitate anymore. He knew that the longer he hesitated, then more of his men would die. So he immediately took his men towards Donghai.

Lu Qian was sweeping through Tianhai’s illegal circles.

Nobody could stop him. Anyone in his way had to die.

There was no other choice but to surrender.

Without Master Fu, Tianhai fell apart like sand, and it became an easy target.

"Master Fu, Master Fu. You've grown old after all."

Lu Qian's eyes were half closed as he stood in front of Masquerade Club and looked at its tightly shut doors. "For twenty over years, you've controlled this place. But it's already been more than twenty years, so you can't fight against time anymore, can you?"

"Boss, do we attack?" asked Explosive Dragon in a cold voice.

"No, don't go in," Lu Qian shook his head. "Master Fu is a very sly fellow. I worry that he has a backup plan to kill us all."

Being careful and cautious was Lu Qian's strength. And that's why he wasn't in a hurry to avenge the two brothers who had been killed tragically by Broken Sword.

He patiently waited until the time was ripe. He had waited until Master Fu and Broken Sword had grown old and only made his move now.

"This wily old fox is very scheming. There's a good reason why he's managed to stick around in Tianhai for so long, so we should always be careful."

"Tsk, if those two old things dare to appear, then I'm going to slaughter them and avenge number 3 and number 4!"

Explosive Dragon clenched his fists and his knuckles cracked like firecrackers.

Eight years ago, they arranged for one of their men to infiltrate Masquerade Club and they finally found a chance to poison Master Fu. So they were sure that Master Fu had really been poisoned and Broken Sword must have brought him to the north to find a cure.

So now Tianhai's illegal circle was left with no leader. Lu Qian had come because he could easily replace Master Fu!

Wait for Master Fu to return?

He wasn't coming back. The moment he

reached the north, he was sure to die!

Lu Qian looked up at Masquerade Club's signboard and wasn't in a hurry.

He knew that things were shaking up in the north, so it was hard to tell if the person who wrote this signboard could even save himself. So from today onwards, Tianhai's illegal circles was going to change its leader.

For the next twenty years, Lu Qian was going to call the shots in both Tianhai and Linhai's illegal circles!

"Get ready and let Lu Xun come over. We can harvest some of these resources already."



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Tianhai's illegal circles were going through a terrible storm.

In just a week, one boss after another fell, and they weren't even able to fight back.

Those who were willing to follow Lu Qian could still be one of his slaves. Even though they were left with no dignity and position, at least they still had their lives.

Those who resisted were all thrown into the sea to feed the fish.

Soon enough, not only were the illegal circles terrified of Lu Qian because of what happened to themselves, but even some powerful members of the legal circle also realized that the illegal circle was changing its leader now.

That almighty Master Fu just disappeared overnight.

Before the Jin family and the Yu family could make their move, they realized they had to change their plans.

Yu Fang came personally to the Jin family to ask to work together and deal with Lin Group as well as Jiang Ning.

They originally intended to use the status of the Jin family to pay a certain sum so that Master Fu would help to attack Jiang Ning and destroy Lin Group. But before they could do anything, Master Fu had vanished.

Even that terrifying grim reaper was nowhere to be found and this really frightened them. They felt that the illegal circle was a really scary place now.

"Since Master Fu is no longer in charge of Shengcheng's illegal circle, then I'll look for their new leader, I'm quite sure he will welcome this plan."

Yu Fang had more dealings with the illegal circle, so he knew more things.

"They just got to Tianhai and will want to stabilize their position here. I believe he will be more than happy to gain the support of my family as well as the Jin family."

"Are you confident?" Jin Yang was hesitant.

The Jin family was well reputed in the legal circle of Shengcheng. So it wasn't really a good thing for them to be overly involved in the illegal circle.

Even though he was angry that Jin Ran had been injured so severely and he swore to take revenge, the family had found a way to treat Jin Ran's legs, so he was hesitant about doing this.

"Mr Jin, do you think the Jin family is really powerful enough to hold up against Lin Group in Shengcheng?" Yu Fang laughed coldly. "I'm not trying to be rude here, but a big shot like Governor Zhang is already a regular guest at Lin Group, so I would imagine that Lin Group will be able to make their way into Shengcheng very easily. When that happens, I'm not sure who would be bullying who."

Jin Yang frowned.

"Don't mind my frankness, but the Jins and the Lins are like water and fire now. If they end up finding a place in Shengcheng and expand their business here, then the one who will suffer is your family."

There was a fierce glint in Jin Yang's eyes as he stared at Yu Fang, "Of course I understand."

"So the one who strikes first gets the upper hand, and the one who strikes late will perish. I'm sure the Jin family understands this more than I do."

Yu Fang's voice grew cold, "If you don't kill them now, they'll kill you instead!"

Yu Fang's threatening face made Jin Yang shudder.

"Besides, Shengcheng is undergoing major changes, so are the Jins going to just hang on to their old ways? If you don't hop on the bandwagon now, then I'm not sure what's going to happen in the future."

Jin Yang stopped hesitating after hearing these words from Yu Fang.

Jin Yang had purposely kept his distance from Master Fu back then because he didn't want to be too heavily involved with the illegal circle.

But his business didn't improve as a result of this decision. On the contrary, Yu Fang was intelligent and motivated, so he got in touch with the illegal circle and the Yu family improved by leaps and bounds in just a few years.

They were still nowhere near the Jin family now, but who knows what might happen in the future?

“What’s your plan?” asked Jin Yang.

“I know the son of the leader of Linhai.” There was a smug look on Yu Fang’s face.

He knew Lu Qian’s son, but they had actually only met once. How would someone like Yu Fang really get to know someone who was of that status and position?

Besides, Yu Fang knew that Lu Qian’s son was an extremely arrogant and audacious person. Now that Tianhai belonged to his family, he was definitely going to come to Shengcheng to throw his weight about!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"Mr Jin, I'll arrange for this. If the Jins just want to take revenge, then that's not too difficult. The difficult part is how to hop onto this large ship and guarantee that your family will continue to prosper over the next twenty years."

Yu Fang then left.

Jin Yang sat there without moving for a long time.

He suddenly felt that he had grown old. His thought process was lagging behind Yu Fang's, and even his boldness and energy had lost to Yu Fang's.

Yu Fang was only in his twenties. Back then, Jin Yang never realized that Yu Fang was such a person.

When he thought about his own son, Jin Ran, Jin Yang couldn't help but sigh. "It's all my fault for pampering him too much. But if I throw Jin Ran into this deep and competitive ocean, would he be able to survive?"

He was quite sure Jin Ran wouldn't survive. So he had to give it his all!

Once the Jin family was stable, then it would be much easier for Jin Ran to take over.

His only hope was that the Yu family wouldn't surpass the Jin family within the next few years.

Everyone knew about the shake up in Shengcheng, and that its leader had changed.

Master Fu was nowhere to be found, while the new leader was powerful and overbearing, so nobody dared to offend him.

Zhang Cheng had even escaped from Shengcheng.

Zhang Cheng now had a fallen expression on his face.

He didn't expect Jiang Ning to refuse him.

"Why should I help you?" Jiang Ning glanced at Zhang Cheng. "Just because I said we're old friends then you really think we are old friends?"

Zhang Cheng's face reddened. "As long as you can guarantee that the brothers who work for me don't die, I'll give you half of my assets!"

Jiang Ning laughed.

"Your assets probably only add up to a few hundred million," he shook his head. "Do you know how much my wife's allowance is?"

Zhang Cheng was stunned, then he shook his head.

Jiang Ning stuck one finger out and waved it about. "Ten billion."

He said this amount very calmly, as if ten billion was as good as ten cents.

But Zhang Cheng and his men gasped and thought Jiang Ning was joking.

He gave his wife ten billion as allowance?

They had heard about how Jiang Ning had made a scene at Donghai Bank, and the CEO ended up making a deep apology to Jiang Ning the next day. But they never imagined that Jiang Ning was this rich.

He wasn't short of money.

He wasn't short of money at all.

Zhang Cheng suddenly realized how foolish he looked by offering Jiang Ning a few hundred million.

"But they're taking all of Shengcheng!" Zhang Cheng continued indignantly. "Are you going to just watch them take it away?"

"They're not taking something that belongs to me anyway," replied Jiang Ning nonchalantly. "I'm happy with what I have. Even if Shengcheng's illegal circle gets wiped out, what has that got to do with me?"

"But..."

Jiang Ning waved his hand. "Enough, we don't have to discuss this any further. See him out!"

Zhang Cheng started getting anxious. If Jiang Ning wasn't willing to help, then he was going to die when he returned to Shengcheng.

Lu Qian would never let him off for coming to Donghai to ask for help.

"This way please," Brother Gou came forward and blocked Zhang Cheng from approaching Jiang Ning. He calmly said, "It's already not bad that we didn't make life difficult for you even

though you came into Donghai, so don't ask for too much."

Zhang Cheng's face was all red. He had never expected himself to end up in such a predicament.

He couldn't stay in Shengcheng anymore, but his request for help in Donghai had been rejected. So what else could he do now?

"I will leave now!"

He took a deep breath but didn't say anything. He turned and walked out with his men.

Even if he died, he was never bowing to a bastard like Lu Qian!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Zhang Cheng had decided to leave, and he was going to fight it out with Lu Qian when he got back to Shengcheng.

He already knew how it would end. He was definitely going to die.

Jiang Ning continued to sit where he was and there was no expression on his face.

"Big Boss, I heard that Lu Qian is the leader of Linhai's illegal circles, and is as powerful as Master Fu. The two of them are sworn enemies over the past ten years," Brother Gou's expression was grim. "Master Fu has suddenly gone missing while Lu Qian has come killing his way into Tianhai. I think this is a scheme of sorts."

Jiang Ning looked at him and nodded. "Not bad, you've improved."

Brother Gou became excited at being complimented. He continued, "Will Lu Qian come to Donghai?"

Since Lu Qian had taken over Shengcheng so easily, then what he wanted to do next was to take over the rest of Tianhai's illegal circles.

Donghai had such a special geographical location, and had long been a territory that many people fought over.

The probability of Lu Qian coming was very high!

"Are you scared of him coming?" asked Jiang Ning.

"Scared my ass! At most we'll just fight him!" replied Brother Gou directly. "Even if I have to die, they can forget about creating any trouble in Donghai!"

During this period of time, everyone was going through the next level of training. It was difficult and tough, but the reward was equally great!

After just a few days, they could feel that their own transformation. This sort of crazy training was able to fully unleash their bodies' potential.

"Hurry up and improve yourselves as much as possible, otherwise I can't take you guys out to do more fun things," said Jiang Ning calmly. "This sort of petty illegal circle fighting is so meaningless."

Brother Gou's expression immediately became excited.

After following Jiang Ning for so long, he had started to understand him. Since Jiang Ning said something like that, it meant that Jiang Ning didn't care for Lu Qian at all.

Jiang Ning just didn't want to be used by Master Fu to kill Lu Qian off for nothing.

That's right!

Jiang Ning didn't even care for Master Fu nor Broken Sword. So this Lu Qian was nothing!

"Enough. If there's nothing else, go back and train. What can you do with your level of fighting?"

"Heehee, I'll go now!"

Brother Gou left with great excitement.

Of course, Jiang Ning knew that Zhang Cheng was definitely going to fight it out with Lu Qian after returning to Shengcheng. But it was very likely that Zhang Cheng was going to die.

Zhang Cheng was a very loyal man, but this wasn't enough to move Jiang Ning.

Jiang Ning had been on the battlefield for more than a decade and had seen many things. Being unable to protect his own men was Zhang Cheng's problem, so what had that got to do with Jiang Ning?

He wasn't going to be the good guy for fun.

In this world, nobody else besides Lin Yuzhen and family was worth him going all out.

"What will Yuzhen cook for me tonight?"

All that Jiang Ning thought about now was what he was going to have for dinner.

Recently, Lin Yuzhen had to learn how to cook a dish from Su Mei every night after coming home, and that was a truly blissful feeling.

Meanwhile.

At the Jin family's house in Shengcheng.

Jin Yang and the rest were all very nervous.

Even the master of the house, Jin Yang, had a stiff expression on his face and didn't dare to be disrespectful at all.

A young man sat at the most important seat of the table. He looked like he was only in his early twenties, but his haughty and condescending expression made one fear him.

"Young Master Lu Xun, these are Tianhai's specialties. Mr Jin specially got the best chef in town to cook these," said Yu Fang with a fake smile on his face.

He wasn't anything in front of Lu Xun. He had been able to invite Lu Xun over only because Lu Xun himself wanted to come.

"Mr Jin, you've been too kind." Lu Xun nodded and Jin Yang immediately picked up his wine glass with both hands. "Young Master Lu, you don't have to stand on ceremony. Let me give a toast to you!"

Jin Yang drank everything down at one shot, but Lu Xun's lips only touched the wine.

He didn't even touch the food, and the air around the table became awkward.

"Mr Jin, isn't it a bit meaningless for a few men like us to just eat and drink?"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Yu Fang was a very proactive man and had already checked what Lu Xun liked. "Oh no, that's not how we do things in Shengcheng."

"Hoho, you're right, Young Master Yu. I've already gotten all prepared."

Jin Yang clapped his hands and several pretty and young ladies walked in. Lu Xun merely glanced at them and snorted.

He still wasn't interested.

He had his fair share of young and pretty ladies given his identity and position.

He wasn't interested in such things anymore.

"Jin Yang, here's the wine you wanted."

Suddenly, an older lady walked in. She looked like she was in her thirties, but she had a voluptuous body and kept herself in good shape. Lu Xun's eyes immediately lit up.

"And this is...?" Lu Xun asked first.

Jin Yang was stunned. This was his third wife, and she was twenty years younger than him. She was also his favorite woman.

"This is my wife, Liu Yu," Jin Yang replied with a smile.

Lu Xun didn't bother about him. He smiled and continued staring at Liu Yu. "So it's Mrs Jin. Come over and sit with us."

Liu Yu was a little nervous and looked at Jin Yang. She only walked over to Jin Yang when he nodded.

"Sit next to me," Lu Xun said with a domineering tone of voice as he pointed to the chair next to his.

Liu Yu's expression changed and Jin Yang started getting angry.

Lu Xun was going too far!

He was about to say something when Yu Fang quickly threw him a glance.

Was Jin Yang going to offend Lu Xun over a woman at this point in time?

Didn't he see the highly skilled fighter that came along with Lu Xun? Just the murderous air emanating from that man was enough to make one nervous!

The one by Lu Xun's side was Explosive Dragon!

He didn't say a word and kept close to Lu Xun. But the smell of murder on him made the air in the room very tense.

Liu Yu was hesitant and nervous, but since Jin Yang didn't say anything, she could only clench her teeth and walk over to Lu Xun. Before she could take a seat, Lu Xun grabbed her hand and pulled her into his embrace.

"Ahh...!"

Liu Yu yelped and Jin Yang felt like he had been slapped in the face. He was furious.

"Mrs Jin, don't be nervous, we're just having a drink."

Lu Xun laughed heartily and didn't care about Jin Yang's expression.

He loved this sort of mature woman – they were so tasty!

But what he loved more was to touch Liu Yu in front of Jin Yang, and Jin Yang wouldn't even dare to say anything.

"I...I'll drink a toast to Young Master Lu."

Liu Yu's face was all red but she didn't dare to move as she allowed Lu Xun's hand to move boldly up her thighs and even slip through the slit of her qipao...

"Come, let drink together!"

Lu Xun picked up his wine glass, and wanted to drink with his arms crossed with Liu Yu's, as if they were a couple.

Jin Yang stared down at his own legs. This was an insult to him!

He was all ready to flip the dinner table, but Yu Fang looked at him to tell him to hold it in.

Which was more important? The future of the Jin family or a woman?

Jin Yang didn't do anything in the end.

"Mrs Jin can really drink huh."

Liu Yu wanted to get up after she finished drinking, but Lu Xun didn't allow her to. He made her sit on his lap as he continued to use one hand to touch Liu Yu's thighs without reservation.

"Young Master Lu, I..."

Liu Yu's face was red from being touched so inappropriately by another man in front of her own husband. And worse still, she felt like her body...was becoming warm too. She was so embarrassed.

"Mrs Jin, are you tired?"

Lu Xun narrowed his eyes and turned to Jin Yang as he said very directly, "Mr Jin, I'll go take a rest with Mrs Jin, you guys can continue drinking!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"Young Master Lu!"

Jin Yang felt blood rush to his head the moment he heard these words.

What did Lu Xun mean by that!

Was he going to violate his woman in front of him in his own house?!

Jin Yang's face was all red from fury as he said a little nastily, "I won't need to bother Young Master Lu to do that."

He got up and pulled Liu Yu back to his side. His expression darkened, "Young Master Lu, if you think the wine here isn't nice to drink, then we can go elsewhere."

This Lu Xun was going too far!

Jin Yang had given in again and again, but Lu Xun kept crossing the line. If he really let Lu Xun have his way with Liu Yu, then how was Jin Yang going to hold his head high in Shengcheng?

Yu Fang wanted to say something, but it was already too late.

"Mr Jin, being so polite with me?" Lu Xun narrowed his eyes and looked at Jin Yang. "Today I insist on taking a rest with Mrs Jin, are you trying to block my way?"

Explosive Dragon immediately looked up after Lu Xun said these words.

Those bloodshot eyes were brimming with murder!

He was only looking at Jin Yang, but Jin Yang could feel his legs tremble.

"Jin Yang..."

Liu Yu was even more frightened. She held onto Jin Yang's arm and was about to start crying.

But this pitiful look on her face made Lu Xun's eyes light up even more, and now he looked like a ravenous wolf.

Lu Xun didn't bother being polite at all. He got up and pulled Liu Yu into his arms, then patted Jin Yang hard on the face.

"Mr Jin, sit here and drink with my third uncle over here. Don't interrupt our rest time."

He then dragged Liu Yu off with him.

Jin Yang was like a wooden pillar. He was stuck where he was and couldn't move.

"Jin Yang...Jin Yang!"

Jin Yang could hear Liu Yu pleading with him, but Jin Yang didn't dare to move at all.

He was very sure that if he dared to move even an inch, Explosive Dragon would smash his brain to pieces.

"Sit down!" Explosive Dragon bellowed. His voice was like thunder and Jin Yang immediately felt his legs go weak and he sat back down on his chair.

"Drink!" Explosive Dragon yelled again, and the murder in his voice was apparent.

Yu Fang quickly poured a glass for Explosive Dragon.

"Mr Jin, she's just a woman, right?"

He consoled Jin Yang, "What is this compared to the future of the Jin family? As long as Young Master Lu is happy, then you won't have to worry about your family's position in Shengcheng in the future."

"Come come come, let me give my elder a toast!"

Yu Fang stood up and held his cup with two hands. He was being very respectful.

Jin Yang had a nasty expression on his face but he didn't have a choice. He squeezed a small smile out and picked up his wine glass.

"Ahh..."

There was a shrill moan from a room not too far off. Lu Xun had clearly left the door open on purpose.

In that instant, Jin Yang's face had reached the peak of his fury.

When he heard that sound, he couldn't get rid of the images in his mind. He clenched his fists tightly and both eyes turned blood red.

He had no idea how much time had passed as he sat there in a daze. After some time, Lu Xun came back, smoothing his clothes out as he walked.

He looked like he hadn't had enough yet.

"Mr Jin, you're getting on in age and you might not have as much stamina as before, so it's really hard on Mrs Jin," sighed Lu Xun. "You don't have to thank me for doing this."


Jin Yang felt his face burn as if he had just been slapped hard in the face.

He didn't dare to be angry and even had to smile along.

Was there anything harder to endure than this?

Lu Xun sat down again and was clearly in a better mood now. He poured a glass of wine for himself, then turned to look at Yu Fang.

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

"Spit it out. What do you want?" Lu Xun spat out in disdain. "I can give you anything you want in Shengcheng."

Yu Fang immediately became excited at these words.

It seemed like everything was negotiable the moment he could find something that Lu Xun liked and made him happy.

"Young Master Lu, we don't ask for much. We just want you to be happy, and that's enough for us," Yu Fang said politely while still putting on a fake smile.

"I don't like hypocrites. Just say what you want to," replied Lu Xun in an arrogant voice. "At least, I have to thank Mr Jin for taking care of me, right?"

He wasn't referring to the food. He was referring to Liu Yu. Jin Yang suddenly felt the urge to kill himself.

"Young Master Lu, I'll just say it then," Yu Fang saw that Jin Yang was still in a daze and didn't intend to speak. So after a short pause, Yu Fang continued, "What the Jin family and Yu family hope to do today is to become your friends in Shengcheng and do some things for you."

He said it in a roundabout manner, but Lu Xun understood what he meant.

So these two families were willing to be his dogs.

Lu Xun smiled faintly. "This is just a small matter. I'll take good care of the Jin family, especially Mrs Jin."

These words meant that he would definitely keep a lookout for the Jin Family. But Jin Yang couldn't find it in himself to feel happy about it.

"Mr Jin?" Yu Fang quickly prodded him. "Aren't you going to thank Young Master Lu?"

Jin Yang snapped out of his daze and there was a stiff smile on his face. "Thank you, Young Master Lu."

He suddenly started regretting all of this. Did the Jins really have to resort to this?

Would the Jins really have trouble surviving in Shengcheng without the help of Lu Xun?

When he was younger, he had used all sorts of unscrupulous methods to get what he wanted. He had given away money, properties, women, absolutely anything. But asking him to do this at this age and in this manner really put Jin

Yang in a spot.

But what else could he do?

There was no turning back now.

"As for the Yu family, I kind of like you, so there's a chance."

Yu Fang became even more excited. "I'll definitely work hard for you and not let you down!"

He immediately raised his glass. "Young Master Lu, let me give you another toast!"

Yu Fang drank everything down while Lu Xun just touched the glass with his lips. He looked up and said, "I heard that the two families have a common enemy, and you want me to take revenge for you?"

Lu Xun looked at both of them.

Yu Fang sighed and waved his hands. "I wouldn't dare to ask Young Master Lu to do anything. That man is a force to be reckoned with, so I think we should just forget it."

"A force to be reckoned with?"

Lu Xun laughed coldly. "You mean there's someone more difficult to deal with than myself?"

Yu Fang knew Lu Xun was an arrogant and audacious type of person, and never had regard for anyone else. Now the Lu family was at its peak and even Master Fu didn't dare to appear in front of them. Their pride was now sky high.

"Young Master Lu, let's just drink and not mention that man."

Yu Fang purposely left his sentence hanging and poured a glass of wine for himself. When he tried to pour a glass for Lu Xun, Lu Xun reached out and stopped him.

"Which man?"

Lu Xun had never been afraid of anyone else, and nobody was too powerful for him to avoid!

Yu Fang purposely looked like he was very conflicted, and finally sighed after a long while.

"That man is called Jiang Ning."

"Young Master Lu, this man is a very vicious one. He broke the legs of Mr Jin's son, and he also killed my younger brother."

Yu Fang looked all helpless as he continued, "I can't do anything about him, and he even said that anyone who dares to make trouble in Donghai can forget about leaving the place alive!"

Lu Xun's eyes instantly narrowed. There was someone even more outrageous than him?

"How bold!"

Lu Xun slammed the table and laughed coldly. "The illegal circles of Tianhai all belong to my family! Where does Jiang Ning find this sort of confidence from?"

"Men!" Lu Xun shouted and a fairly skinny man came running in.

"Go to Donghai right now and tell that Jiang Ning to chop one of his own arms off!"

Lu Xun sneered, "Tell him, Lu Xun said so!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

So arrogant!

So domineering!

Lu Xun had never been afraid of anyone before!

What was Jiang Ning?

He was just an ant from a tiny city and he dared to act all high and mighty in front of Lu Xun?

All Lu Xun needed was to say the word, and Jiang Ning would admit defeat and chop his own arm off.

Yu Fang became a little agitated. He didn't think that Lu Xun was this overbearing.

No wonder Master Fu just decided to leave Tianhai instead of fighting the Lu family head on. The Lu family was too imposing.

"He's just an ant, isn't he?"

Lu Xun looked at Yu Fang and Jin Yang. "Squashing him is a simple thing to me."

"Yes yes yes! Nobody would dare to act all high and mighty in front of you!"

Yu Fang refilled the glasses and turned to Jin Yang. "Mr Jin, let's give a toast to Young Master Lu together!"

Jin Yang didn't say anything. He was equally shocked.

He knew very well how audacious Jiang Ning was, and he knew that many others had suffered great losses after attempting to attack Donghai, including his own family.

But Lu Xun was so confident of himself. He was so sure that he only needed to say the word and Jiang Ning would surrender an arm to him in apology.

He had been so unhappy earlier because Lu Xun had played with his woman. Now Jin Yang started to feel fear in his heart.

He really couldn't afford to offend anyone from the Lu family!

"Young Master Yu, let me give you a toast as well!"

After the first glass, he quickly poured another glass out to thank Yu Fang for

reminding him earlier.

He nearly made a terrible mistake!

Lu Xun's mood improved when he could see that Jin Yang had understood his place and was being respectful towards Lu Xun.

He liked this sort of situation where even after he had slapped that person, the other party couldn't get angry and would even have to shout 'bravo!'

He really loved this feeling of being above everyone else and stepping on everybody else's pride.

"Don't worry, it only takes a little more than an hour to reach Donghai and come back, I'm sure Jiang Ning will learn his lesson."

Lu Xun laughed disdainfully.

Surely Jiang Ning knew what the situation in Shengcheng was. Whoever dared to block the Lu family would be turned to ashes!

Even Master Fu had scrambled off. So who else could stop them?

They drank more and more. Lu Xun went looking for Liu Yu two more times, and each time the moans got louder. Even Yu Fang started getting distracted and started cursing Jin Yang for still being so active even at this age.

Soon enough, one and a half hours had passed.

Lu Xun was seated on his chair and his face was red. He wasn't sure if it was because of the wine or because of the excitement.

He narrowed his eyes and said calmly, "It's about time he's come back."

He was waiting to show off how powerful he was in front of Yu Fang and Jin Yang.

"You-young Master Lu...Young Master Lu...AH!"

There was a terrible scream and the voice was trembling.

Lu Xun's eyes instantly widened while Yu Fang and Jin Yang sobered up.

The man that Lu Xun had sent out earlier had come stumbling into the room. One of his arms had been chopped off and he was holding onto it while bleeding profusely.

His face was pale and his forehead was covered in sweat and he was clearly in shock. "Young Master Lu...My arm...my arm was chopped off by them..."

BAM!

Lu Xun's eyes nearly popped out of their sockets in his anger as he slammed the table hard. "He's really bold!"

His face instantly reddened as if Jiang Ning had slapped him hard. He was just short of five red finger marks.

He had just guaranteed that Jiang Ning would obediently chop an arm off in apology.

In the end?

Jiang Ning had chopped off the arm of the man he sent instead!

"He...he also said..."

That man had lost too much blood and could barely speak or stand properly anymore.

"What did he say!" yelled Lu Xun angrily.

"He said, whoever makes trouble in Donghai is dead meat!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"So audacious!"

Lu Xun laughed coldly. "Who is this son of a bitch, how dare he go against me like this?!"

"Young Master Lu...they're too domineering!"

"Domineering? Nobody has ever dared to be more domineering than me!"

Lu Xun looked at Yu Fang and Jin Yang. They didn't say anything, but it was clear from their expressions that Lu Xun had embarrassed himself this time.

He was so confident earlier and talked about how amazing he was. And now?

Jiang Ning didn't even care about him, and sent this slap in the face back!

"Young Master Yu, do you think I'm lying to you?" Lu Xun became a little frustrated.

Yu Fang just smiled but didn't say anything.

This made Lu Xun feel even worse.

He clenched his fists. "Third Uncle."

Explosive Dragon remained seated and had no expression on his face.

But after seeing how one of his men was now missing an arm, a glint of hatred did flash across his eyes.

"Your father did not tell us to enter any other city," he said.

Lu Qian hadn't given any orders with regard to that.

They had taken over Shengcheng's illegal circle so that they could pull all of Shengcheng's resources together. As for the other cities, most of the bosses would surrender obediently without Lu Qian doing anything.

But what was going on with this Donghai now?

"I'm the Young Master of the Lu family, so there are some things I can decide on!"

Lu Xun had a dark expression on his face. "I can't always get my Dad to do everything! I should share his burden too!"

Explosive Dragon nodded. "Sure, I'll help you to kill him!"

Lu Xun regained his confidence when he heard Explosive Dragon's words.

"Jiang Ning! I originally only wanted an arm, but you seem tired of living!"

Jiang Ning's life alone was enough to make up for sending a slap in his face and embarrassing him like that!

Lu Xun's reputation was worth more than ten lives!

"Young Master Lu!"

Yu Fang immediately stood up when he realized Lu Xun was going to Donghai right now. "Don't be rash!"

"Donghai is a very dangerous place and many people have already perished. If you go now, it's too dangerous!"

He had a face filled with concern and anxiety, "Don't bother about those worthless people, it's not worth risking your life for!"

PAK!

Lu Xun slapped Yu Fang and sent him flying.

"Risk my life?"

Lu Xun's expression grew nasty. When was Tianhai a dangerous place?

Just because of one Jiang Ning?

He wasn't worthy of this reputation!

"I'm going to let you see what happens when you offend the Lu family!" roared Lu Xun angrily as he walked out with Explosive Dragon.

Yu Fang was sprawled on the floor as he clutched his face, but there was a malicious smile on his lips.

"Jiang Ning, Jiang Ning...I was still afraid that you might really admit defeat and chop your own arm off. But you turned out to be as audacious as I expected, and now, you don't even know which terrifying person you've offended!"

Lu Xun had left with Explosive Dragon!

That was a frightening skilled fighter who was cruel and vicious and killed without batting an eyelid.

Yu Fang could almost see how Jiang Ning would have his limbs broken off, his neck twisted, and his body fed to the fish in the sea.

"Young Master Yu..."

Jin Yang was still quite terrified. He felt that things had taken a sudden and frightening turn.

"Mr Jin, you should be happy about this."

Yu Fang got up and sat down on the chair again as if nothing had happened. Even though there was still an imprint on his face, it didn't seem to bother him and he just continued drinking.

"You just had to sacrifice one woman and you've gotten on the Lu family boat. Isn't that worth it? It's such a good deal!"

Yu Fang laughed loudly and he had a meaningful look on his face.

He even wished that his own mother were a little younger.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Jin Yang didn't say anything as he watched Yu Fang laugh loudly like a mad man. That palm imprint was still on his face but he seemed so excited.

Jin Yang and his entire family was now on board the Lu family's ship, so he didn't have a choice anymore.

He had even given away the woman he liked best. So what else was there to say?

When he saw how fierce Lu Xun looked, and that Explosive Dragon...

Jiang Ning was really dead meat this time.

Jiang Ning had broken his son's legs, and now Jin Yang had avenged him at last.

While Lu Xun was making his way to Donghai in great fury, Jiang Ning was at a hot spring resort.

"I told you not to tire yourself out," Jiang Ning nagged. "The company can take its time to advance, and it's good enough for you to just have a training ground."

Lin Yuzhen had worked too hard and her body was so tired.

Jiang Ning couldn't stand it anymore when he saw how she would massage her neck and shoulders from time to time and looked like she was feeling great discomfort.

He made her stop work immediately and brought her out to relax.

This hot spring resort belonged to Huang Yuming, and it was fairly famous in Donghai.

Not just any resort could get such a good spot with a natural hot spring after all.

"Jiang Ning...I still have reports to read."

Lin Yuzhen had changed out of her clothes, but she was still talking about work.

She had changed into a bikini, but she still kept a towel wrapped around herself, and was just short of wrapping her entire body up.

"If you talk some more about work, I'll shut the company down right now!"

Lin Yuzhen didn't dare to say anymore when she heard Jiang Ning's threat.

She looked at the steaming pool, then looked at Jiang Ning leaning against the side of the pool without a shirt on and enjoying himself with his eyes half closed, as she wondered if she should step in or not.

This was a private area, and Huang Yuming had prepared this pool specially for Jiang Ning.

But even so, Lin Yuzhen still felt a little uncomfortable about soaking in the hot spring with just Jiang Ning.

"Why are you still standing there?"

Jiang Ning could tell that Lin Yuzhen hadn't stepped into the water yet, so he calmly said, "After you're done soaking, I'll get the masseuse to massage your body and help you to relax, then you can work better."

"So it's all for the sake of my work, isn't it," said Lin Yuzhen softly.

"What did you say?"

Jiang Ning opened his eyes and noticed that Lin Yuzhen was still in a towel. "How are you going to soak in the pool like that?"

"How else then?"

"Get rid of that towel."

Lin Yuzhen pulled the towel off and her milky soft skin was instantly revealed. Jiang Ning could feel how smooth it was even without touching it.

He suddenly went into a daze and continued staring at Lin Yuzhen, until her face was all red.

"What...what are you looking at?!"

She frantically walked into the pool and only left her head above the surface of the water. She hid her good figure inside the water and leaned against the wall furthest from Jiang Ning so that she could keep her distance from this man with a gleam in his eye.

"I didn't expect you to have such a good figure," laughed Jiang Ning.

She had been his wife for so long, but he'd never measured her before.

Lin Yuzhen's face grew even redder as she retorted, "You're not to look!"

Jiang Ning cursed Huang Yuming for giving him such a big pool. Two of them

only needed a pool that was three feet wide.

"Ok, I won't look."

That was what Jiang Ning said, but his eyes were still fixed on Lin Yuzhen's face.

But the steam was very thick and he really couldn't see anything else.

"Jiang Ning."

"Yeah."

"Do I really have a good figure?" Lin Yuzhen suddenly asked.

That cautious tone of voice and eyes filled with anticipation made Jiang Ning's heart skip a beat. He felt like he might lose control of himself soon.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Jiang Ning wished Lin Yuzhen didn't look at him with such anticipation.

"It's not bad."

"You've seen other women before?"

Lin Yuzhen's thought process didn't seem like most other people. "Otherwise how would you make a comparison?"

"....."

Jiang Ning was speechless. He just felt that that were traps everywhere. If he wasn't careful, he'd fall into one set up by Lin Yuzhen.

"No need to compare. I like those with long legs."

"Are my legs long? I've never measured them before."

Oh my goodness.

Jiang Ning suddenly felt that his battle against 300 vicious enemies in the Middle East didn't make his blood rush as insanely as right now.

"You want me to help you measure?" he asked as his Adam's apple moved slightly.

Before Lin Yuzhen could answer, Jiang Ning stretched his arms out and swam across to where Lin Yuzhen was.

The two of them were now facing each other in the steam and were no more than two feet apart.

Lin Yuzhen's face was all red, but she didn't know if it was because the hot spring water was too warm or if it was because she was nervous and shy.

"Then...then how do you intend to measure them?" she asked in a soft voice.

That voice was so soft that it was nearly swallowed up by the steam.

And he felt that he could hear Lin Yuzhen's pounding heart in this voice.

"Like this."

Jiang Ning kept a calm expression on as he stuck his hand into the water, picked up one of Lin Yuzhen's legs and used his other hand to measure palm by palm starting from her heel.

"One palm, two palms..."

Jiang Ning was expressionless, but Lin Yuzhen was biting her lips because she was so nervous and so shy.

This was the first time Jiang Ning was touching her leg.

Why didn't he have any expression at all?

Was he seriously measuring her leg?

"Four palms..."

His measuring had gone past her knee.

Was Jiang Ning continuing upwards?

Lin Yuzhen suddenly started regretting this. How did she agree to do this?!

She wanted to take her leg back, but Jiang Ning refused to let go.

"Jiang Ning!" Lin Yuzhen suddenly shouted.

Jiang Ning immediately stopped. He looked up and asked her very seriously, "What's wrong?"

"Uh...how many palms have you reached?"

Lin Yuzhen wanted to tell him not to measure anymore, but somehow it became this question instead.

She felt like burying herself in the pool. She had no idea what had come over her. Why did she ask such a question?!

"Now that you ask me, I've forgotten."

Jiang Ning looked straight at Lin Yuzhen. "Why don't I start again?"

He then started from her heel again. This time he was more relaxed inside.

"One palm, two palms..."

BAM!

There was suddenly a blast from outside, as if the door had been kicked open.

Lin Yuzhen immediately panicked and took her leg back. She curled up inside

the pool and only half her head was above water. She was so nervous.

"What happened?" she asked.

Jiang Ning looked up and was instantly furious.

Who the hell was making trouble at this time?

He had already reached four palms and had gone past the knee already!

It wasn't easy to create this sort of atmosphere and it wasn't easy to be able to become more intimate with his beloved wife. So who the fuck was here to make trouble?!

"Nothing." Jiang Ning suppressed the fury in his eyes. "Stay here and continue to soak, no worries. I'll go and have a look."

He stood up and Lin Yuzhen could see that he had a muscular body, but while his muscles didn't bulge out, they still looked rugged. She could sense that this body contained a terrifying amount of power.

There were many scars all over Jiang Ning's body from all sorts of injuries. They were a testament to everything he had gone through over all these years.

Lin Yuzhen went into a daze looking at him.

"Jiang Ning...how much has he suffered?"

She suddenly felt her heart ache for him.

Meanwhile, Jiang Ning had put a bathrobe on as he walked out without any particular expression on his face. But his gaze was fierce enough to kill someone!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

There were five or six men howling in pain at the lobby of the hot spring resort.

Explosive Dragon was very vicious and broke their arms without any mercy.

Lu Xun stood there and looked around as he calmly said, "Where is Jiang Ning? I know he's here, so tell him to get his ass here right now!"

He came to Donghai without any hesitation.

Nobody had ever dared to go against him, and definitely nobody ever dared to embarrass him!

Jiang Ning had some guts!

So now he had come personally to make sure Jiang Ning was beaten to death. He was going to show Yu Fang and Jin Yang that he was a man of his word.

Nobody could hold up against the Lu family's power!

"Hoho, looks like this Jiang Ning is a coward who doesn't dare to come out at all."

Lu Xun laughed coldly and yelled loudly, "Jiang Ning, quickly come out and let me kill you! Otherwise I'm going to burn this resort down!"

He was really capable of doing such a thing.

Explosive Dragon stood in front of him, and he lived up to his nickname.

He had no expression on his face, but there was intense murder in his eyes.

He had always been a violent and impatient man who had followed Lu Qian for more than ten years. As long as Lu Qian told him to kill this person, he never asked why and just killed the other party.

Now that he was in charge of protecting Lu Xun and he treated Lu Xun like his own son, he treated Lu Xun the same way.

"Third Uncle, I think you didn't hit these people hard enough and they're not shouting loudly enough."

Explosive Dragon narrowed his eyes. He walked over to one of the staff and suddenly stepped hard on him.

KACHA!

"AHHHHHHH!"

There was a bloodcurdling scream.

His thigh bone had been broken just by someone stepping on it!

Explosive Dragon was so violent.

He lifted his leg and aimed it at the staff's head.

If this foot went down, then that staff's head would definitely be smashed to pieces.

"Who are you people?"

A low and slightly angry voice asked this question.

Lu Xun looked up to see Jiang Ning walk out and he raised an eyebrow.

"You're Jiang Ning?"

He didn't expect Jiang Ning to be a skinny looking fellow. His face didn't look like it could take much either.

"You're looking for me but you don't know what I look like?"

Jiang Ning laughed coldly, but there was a fire burning in his heart.

He finally had a chance to spend quality time with Lin Yuzhen and these assholes dared to disrupt his private time!

"Which idiot is this now, coming here to make trouble?"

Lu Xun frowned. "My name is Lu Xun! How dare you talk to me like this!"

"Lu Xun?"

Jiang Ning remembered now. Brother Gou told him some stupid idiot came to Donghai to look for Jiang Ning because he wanted Jiang Ning to chop off his own arm as an apology to the Jin family in Shengcheng. Brother Gou dealt with him already.

Jiang Ning had no time for these stray dogs and stray cats.

But it seems like their owner had come knocking on his door.

"This son of a bitch."

Jiang Ning just waved his hand. "I don't care who the hell you are. You've

ruined my mood and you've beaten the staff up, so you can forget about leaving this place!"

He was furious!

"You're too audacious!"

Explosive Dragon took a step forward and his body instantly exuded a terrifying sort of air.

It was as if a ferocious dragon had set its eyes on Jiang Ning as its prey and was going to eat Jiang Ning alive!

"Third Uncle, break his limbs and bring him back. I'm going to kill him myself!" shouted Lu Xun.

Nobody had ever dared to call him a son of a bitch. This Jiang Ning was too arrogant, so he didn't want to let Jiang Ning die so easily. He was going to slowly torture Jiang Ning and make sure he made Jiang Ning's life a living hell!

SWOOSH.

Explosive Dragon made his move.


He was a killing machine with no emotions and no patience at all.

He leapt forward and the ground shook a little. Explosive Dragon landed in front of Jiang Ning with a loud boom.

"Go to hell!"

Explosive Dragon bellowed with a face filled with contempt as he threw a punch towards Jiang Ning's thigh.

As per his usual habit, he would break Jiang Ning's legs first, then his arms next!

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

BAM!

Suddenly, an even more powerful force gushed out!

Jiang Ning's fist didn't seem like much, but it was like rushing river waters and was extremely ferocious.

Explosive Dragon's expression instantly changed.

He wanted to only use 50% of his strength, but now he immediately turned it up to 90%. He didn't expect Jiang Ning to be someone with training!

But of course he wasn't in time.

CRACK!

Compared to Explosive Dragon's punch, Jiang Ning's was faster! More powerful! And fiercer!

His fist smashed into Explosive Dragon's thigh. There was a loud cracking sound – that was the sound of a bone cracking!

Explosive Dragon went flying. The shock on his face had now turned into fear.

The power this one punch packed was way too terrifying!

If he hadn't dodged fast enough, his leg might be amputated on the spot!

He was a highly skilled fighter!

This Jiang Ning was a highly skilled fighter!

"Lu Xun.."

Explosive Dragon yelled out and wanted Lu Xun to run. But before he could get his full sentence out, Jiang Ning was already in front of him.

How was he so fast?

"You're still thinking of escaping?"

These two had ruined his day and they still hoped to escape?

They could dream on!

BAM! BAM! BAM!

Jiang Ning punched three consecutive times and reached the peak of his power. The air exploded around his fists and Explosive Dragon couldn't react in time at all.

He was now like a sandbag in front of Jiang Ning and could only wait to be beaten.

In a blink of an eye, he crashed heavily onto the floor as fresh blood spurted from his mouth and his face was completely swollen.

His four limbs were twisted in the wrong direction because all his bones were broken.

"Ahhh..."

The only sound that Explosive Dragon could still make was this low groaning sound.

Lu Xun was completely rooted to the spot.

He was in shock.

Only a few seconds had passed from the time Jiang Ning made his first move to the time Explosive Dragon crashed to the floor.

What the...

What the hell was going on?

GULP!

Lu Xun gulped and stood where he was as if he was nailed to the floor. He couldn't move at all because he was in such shock.

He knew very well how powerful Explosive Dragon was. He was one of the three highly skilled fighters who worked for his father. How...how did he collapse so easily?

Monster!

A demon!

These were the words that popped up in Lu Xun's brain to describe Jiang Ning. Jiang Ning was just a man wearing a bathrobe, but he was definitely a terrifying demon!

Explosive Dragon lay on the floor and couldn't fight back at all. He was now like

a dead dog. There was none of that arrogance he had earlier.

Lu Xun was still frozen. His legs were about to give way, but the rest of him stood there stiffly.

"What...what do you want?"

Lu Xun's voice trembled as he saw Jiang Ning start walking over to him slowly.

"My father is Lu Qian...he's someone that even Master Fu doesn't dare to offend, so if you dare to touch me, my father will...AHHH!"

Before he could finish speaking, Jiang Ning slapped him hard across the face.

There was a loud PAK! Lu Xun collapsed onto the floor.

Two teeth flew out and there was blood on them.

"Lu Qian? Which son of a bitch is that?"

Jiang Ning said it again!

He looked down at Lu Xun with one foot stepping on Lu Xun's face. "Do I have to know every son of a bitch out there?"

Lu Xun was shuddering. He was terrified now.

Who on earth was this Jiang Ning?!

He wasn't afraid of his father, Lu Qian?

He actually dared to hit him?!

"I...you're asking for it...AHH!"

Lu Xun howled again.

Jiang Ning stepped on his arm and broke it. He laughed coldly, "Are you threatening me? The thing I fear the least is a threat!"

"I...let me off..."

Lu Xun started convulsing. His face was pale and he was sweating profusely, but he didn't dare to continue arguing.

"Let you off?" asked Jiang Ning coldly.

"Did you think my words were just a fart?"

"If you dare to make trouble in Donghai, then you can forget about getting out of here alive!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

He never joked around with such words.

He wanted to make Donghai a place that was as strong as iron, a place where nobody dared to create any trouble. And he meant it!

But these people kept coming time and again to make trouble. Did they think he didn't dare to kill them off?

Jiang Ning merely couldn't be bothered with these small fry.

Something he could squish easily between his fingers were nothing to him.

"You..."

Lu Xun's voice trembled. "You dare..."

CRAAAACK!

Before he could finish his sentence, Jiang Ning stepped on Lu Xun and he died on the spot.

There was nothing Jiang Ning didn't dare to do.

Explosive Dragon was still sprawled on the ground. His four limbs were broken and he was still spewing blood from his mouth. He shuddered as he watched Jiang Ning literally kill Lu Xun by stepping on him. He wanted to get up, but he couldn't move at all.

He opened his mouth, but more blood flowed out instead.

Fear!

There was no trace of arrogance on Explosive Dragon's face now.

There was only fear in his eyes.

He was afraid of this demon called Jiang Ning!

Who was this man? He was even more powerful than when Broken Sword was younger!

They had only dared to make their move after Broken Sword had grown old. But even so, it still required all three Dragons to come together before they could defeat Broken Sword right now.

But Jiang Ning was like an abyss. Whoever went up against him was dead meat.

He was afraid and he was filled with regret. He wasn't worried about whether he was going to die or not. He was afraid that since Lu Xun had died, Lu Qian would be furious and would definitely try to take revenge on Jiang Ning...

When that happened, the entire Lu family was going to perish for sure!

Jiang Ning was not someone they could fight against!

Explosive Dragon's eyes widened as he looked at Jiang Ning. He wanted to go back and tell Lu Qian to never come to Donghai!

Never!

But he had no such chance.

"Boss...Boss...never come to Donghai...never..." Explosive Dragon continued to chant to himself.

Jiang Ning glanced at him and scoffed. "Throw them into the sea."

Jiang Ning didn't look at them anymore and walked back to his VIP hot spring room.

In no time, some men came to drag Explosive Dragon and Lu Xun away like they were dragging two dead dogs away.

The floor was mopped clean and everything went back to normal, as if nothing had happened at all.

After venting his frustration, Jiang Ning wasn't as angry as before.

Even the greatest boxer in the illegal circles of Eastern Europe didn't have the guts to interrupt his time with Lin Yuzhen!

"Jiang Ning?"

Lin Yuzhen called out softly when she heard a sound from behind her.

"Yeah."

She calmed down once she confirmed it was Jiang Ning.

She had no idea what just happened outside and was a little worried.

Jiang Ning didn't step into the pool again and just sat down to wipe himself off, ready to change back into his clothes. Since Lu Xun had already come to Donghai, Lu Qian was probably not too far off.

Jiang Ning had entered the game that Master Fu had set up, but there was no way he was going to move according to Master Fu's plans.

If Master Fu wanted to make use of him to kill his enemy, then Master Fu had to pay a price too.

"You're leaving?"

Lin Yuzhen got up from the pool, her beautiful figure in full view.

She walked over and sat behind Jiang Ning as she took the towel from him. "I'll help you wipe your back."

Jiang Ning nodded but didn't say anything.

"What happened outside?" Lin Yuzhen wiped away the water on Jiang Ning's back as she asked in a gentle voice.

"Nothing, two stray dogs came running in, and I've already chased them out," replied Jiang Ning casually.

Lin Yuzhen wasn't thinking about whether Jiang Ning was telling the truth or not. Her attention was focused on the immense number of scars that covered Jiang Ning's back.

Her finger had accidentally touched one of them and she drew her hand back as if she had been electrocuted.

Those frightening scars must have bled a lot before they healed.

He had so many scars. How much had Jiang Ning gone through and how many injuries had he suffered? And who had taken care of him whenever he got injured?



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls



Wait! I Have Something to Say!

He must have been very lonely tending to his wounds all by himself.

Lin Yuzhen didn't know why she was thinking about all this.

She gently bit her lip as her finger couldn't help reaching out to gently touch some of the scars.

"Does it hurt?"

Jiang Ning's heart leapt violently. He shook his head, "They don't hurt anymore."

He looked back to see Lin Yuzhen's eyes brimming with tears.

"You've suffered a lot, haven't you?"

Lin Yuzhen looked up and a tear fell.

Jiang Ning had told her before that he had really been homeless before and roamed the streets. There were even a few times he had nearly died...

These scars were proof of how much pain and suffering he must have gone through.

Her heart ached so badly for him.

"No matter how hard life was, my heart never felt bitter."

Jiang Ning smiled. "Because I had eaten the sweetest candy in the world."

That was the candy that Lin Yuzhen had given him when she was a child.

Lin Yuzhen covered some of the scars with her soft palm and felt how rough those scars were. She felt like she could imagine what Jiang Ning had gone through.

"Promise me, don't get hurt ever again, ok?"

Lin Yuzhen looked up and her eyes were filled with pleading.

She didn't want to see another scar on Jiang Ning's body. It must really hurt!

"Of course, I'll listen to everything you say."

Jiang Ning nodded seriously.

Both of them changed and left the resort. Lin Yuzhen decided not to get the massage since she already felt much better after soaking in the hot spring.

She only wanted to focus on working even harder and becoming even stronger, so that she could stand next to Jiang Ning and share some of his burden.

She couldn't let Jiang Ning be so lonely again.

After sending Lin Yuzhen back to the office, Jiang Ning went to the training facility.

Brother Gou and the rest were working hard on training themselves up.

The new course design was completely different from the first one they had.

The first one was to unleash their potential, so that their speed, power, agility and strength could be trained to its maximum.

This second one was one that trained up technique – the technique of killing people!

Brother Gou and the others now realized that everything they knew before was just trash.

In just a week of training, they started to feel like these techniques were an art. Now they understood that actually the underlying principle was very simple. If they hadn't reached this level, they wouldn't have understood it at all.

Jiang Ning was now teaching them the most basic principle!

They had to learn to kill with one shot and never waste any bit of their energy!

If they had to make a move, they had to be quick, accurate and vicious!

They were to leave no mercy!

Brother Gou wondered if the peak of this training was to become like Jiang Ning. One punch would be all it would take to knock any enemy out!

"ROARR!"

"HAAAA!"

BAM!

Thirty of them were paired up and started sparring without mercy.

They were ferocious, bloodthirsty and insane!

Everyone was bruised and some were even bleeding, but nobody stopped.

This was a group of wild beasts, a pack of wild animals gone mad!

Jiang Ning parked the car and leaned against the car door. He watched this bunch of crazy men from afar and quietly lit a cigarette.

The wind blew the smoke away.

He narrowed his eyes. "After this little pack of vicious wolves are done training, it will get interesting, I suppose."

Until now, Jiang Ning was still feeling bored.

His enemies were too weak, so it wasn't interesting.

The other side was too stupid, so it wasn't fun.

He hardly felt the urge to even fight.

But now Jiang Ning smiled when he looked over at the wolves. "It's time it started. Let's start from today then."



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls



Wait! I Have Something to Say!

Jiang Ning didn't teach Brother Gou and the rest a lot of moves. He only taught them three moves. They looked simple, but there were a thousand and one ways of adapting them.

Different people had different strengths, so they could adapt the technique accordingly.

The scariest part was that all these techniques were essentially very simple but extremely effective and could do tremendous damage.

Brother Gou and the rest were excited just by realizing this.

They knew that they had arrived at another world, and Jiang Ning had opened the door to this world for them.

They were even clearer on the fact that the road ahead on this second stage of their career would be tougher, but way more exciting.

As long as they could follow Jiang Ning, they weren't afraid of anything!

When Jiang Ning saw how the wolves were doing at the training facility, he wasn't worried at all. After just taking a glance at them and finishing his cigarette, he drove off.

Meanwhile.

In Shengcheng.

Lu Qian was here!

He hadn't heard anything from his son, Lu Xun, and he had even lost contact with Explosive Dragon. Lu Qian was worried that Master Fu had come back and killed his folks.

But after returning to Shengcheng, there was no trace of Master Fu anywhere.

That old thing wouldn't dare to come back.

He had been worried for nothing.

But where was Lu Xun then?

His son loved to play and went anywhere he wanted, and he was an extremely arrogant and condescending character. Lu Qian knew, but it didn't bother him.

Lu Xun was Lu Qian's son, so who cared if he was domineering? It was only right of him to be arrogant!

Since Master Fu dared not come back to Tianhai, then he had nothing to worry about.

"There's no trace of Master Fu nor Broken Sword. Looks like our news is reliable. Master Fu is dead." Ice Dragon had picked up some information. He frowned, "If Master Fu is dead, then we should make some preparations in case Broken Sword comes back to attack us."

Once a highly skilled fighter like Broken Sword fought back, it could become a very scary matter.

If he was bent on killing, who could stop him?

"It doesn't matter," Lu Qian didn't seem the least bothered. "Don't forget, he's gotten old. That broken sword of his is probably all rusty now."

He scoffed, "Their backing in the north is going to collapse soon, so nobody would care about them. Don't worry, if Master Fu is intelligent enough, he will take all his assets and flee as far away as he can right now."

If he insisted on staying, he would surely die.

"Still no news about Explosive Dragon?" asked Lu Qian. "They've been here for an entire day already but I haven't heard anything yet."

Before leaving home, Lu Qian had told Lu Xun that no matter what he did in Shengcheng, he had to report to Lu Qian first. In the end?

There was no news after he arrived in Shengcheng. Apparently he had gone to discuss business with some friends.

What sort of business did he even know?!

"No news. Don't worry Boss, with Explosive Dragon around, Lu Xun will be fine," replied Ice Dragon.

Lu Qian nodded and let it go.

There were only a few people left in Shengcheng who were still stubbornly holding on.

Zhang Cheng even boldly declared that he wasn't going to give in even if he had to die.

Lu Qian only had disdain for him and nothing else.

He didn't kill Zhang Cheng immediately only because he still needed someone

familiar with that particular territory to control it. After all, Zhang Cheng had been in control of it for the past ten years.

The moment he could find a replacement for Zhang Cheng, Zhang Cheng wasn't even going to live to see the next day.

Besides Zhang Cheng, there were others in Shengcheng facing the same situation.

Shengcheng covered a huge area. If Master Fu controlled it all by himself, that would take a lot of energy and it was too difficult.

So he had decided to delegate areas to different bosses. It was a very smart move. Others could help share the burden of controlling the various areas, and he could still remain the one in charge of the whole city.

He just needed to control Zhang Cheng and the other bosses.

He was a wily old fox after all.

Even Lu Qian, a sworn enemy of his for the past decade, had to admire the fact that Master Fu was a really scheming one.


Lu Qian had it all planned out. Once he had taken full control of Shengcheng and cleaned it out, he would start moving towards the other cities within Tianhai.

It wouldn't take too much time, and it wouldn't even take too much effort to do so.

So of course, Lu Qian wasn't bothered by these things.

But after the time went past 9PM with no news of Lu Xun, Lu Qian started to feel uneasy.

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls

 Wait! Have Something to Say!

"Keep looking!" Lu Qian sent orders out. Both Ice Dragon and Blood Dragon had sent a lot of men out, but they still couldn't find Lu Xun nor Explosive Dragon.

"How did they go missing?" Lu Qian started becoming worried. "Has Broken Sword returned?"

"That's not possible," replied Ice Dragon. "Given Broken Sword's usual way of doing things, he wouldn't come back silently."

If Broken Sword had done anything, the news would be shocking, because he would want others to know that he had returned with Master Fu. But till now, there was no news about them.

"Who did Lu Xun discuss business with?" asked Lu Qian.

"The Yu family and Jin family."

Lu Qian got up. "Go to the Yu family now!"

He didn't hesitate at all. The uneasy feeling in his heart made him somewhat worried.

He hoped that his guess was wrong.

At this moment, Yu Fang was sitting in his study and making tea.

He was also waiting for news.

Lu Xun had gone to Donghai in the afternoon. Why hadn't he returned yet?

On top of that, there wasn't even a single bit of news from him.

Had they also perished in Donghai?

"Impossible!"

Yu Fang immediately refuted his own guess.

"He's someone from the Lu family! And a highly skilled fighter like Explosive Dragon went with him, so Jiang Ning is definitely going to die!"

Yu Fang knew very well how terrifying Explosive Dragon was. During this short time when many in Shengcheng were fighting against the Lu family, this man had smashed so many heads to mush!

This man was a monster.

"But why is there still no news?"

Yu Fang could still feel some fear towards Jiang Ning.

Yu Fang only knew too well how powerful and domineering Jiang Ning could be.

That was why he had purposely agitated Lu Xun so that he would bring Explosive Dragon to make trouble for Jiang Ning. But now he started feeling uneasy.

If Lu Xun died in Donghai, then...then his family might be doomed.

BANG!

Just as he was thinking about this, there was a loud blast from outside as if someone had kicked his main door open.

"Where the hell is Yu Fang!"

Yu Fang was so terrified by this roar that he dropped his tea cup and it smashed onto the floor.

He quickly ran out to see that it was Lu Qian. He was accompanied by two scary monsters, Ice Dragon and Blood Dragon. Yu Fang quickly put on his best smile.

"Good evening, Mr Lu!" Yu Fang clasped his hands together. "I'm not sure why Mr Lu has come to my place?"

Yu Tian and the rest of the family had heard the blast of the door being kicked open and ran out too. But when they saw who had come, none of them dared to speak up and left it to Yu Fang.

"You don't know why I'm here?" Lu Qian stared at Yu Fang and narrowed his eyes. "Where's my son?"

Yu Fang's heart trembled violently when he heard this question.

Even Lu Qian couldn't find Lu Xun?

Lu Xun hadn't come back yet!

Yu Fang felt like his heart had suddenly stopped, and he kept swallowing his saliva.

"Young Master Lu...hasn't he gone to Donghai?"

Yu Fang noticed that Lu Qian still looked murderous, so he quickly explained, "He said he wanted to go to Donghai to settled a feud and left in the afternoon. You mean he hasn't come back yet?"

Lu Qian became even more worried now.

Donghai?

That legendary forbidden territory? That city had never bothered him, but now Lu Xun had gone there and hadn't returned yet.

PAK!

He walked up and grabbed Yu Fang by the collar. He slapped Yu Fang across the face so hard that there was fresh blood coming out from Yu Fang's mouth.

Yu Tian wanted to say something, but he was too afraid to say anything after Blood Dragon and Ice Dragon glared so fiercely at him.

"You better explain the whole thing to me carefully, otherwise everybody in this family is going to die!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

These chilling words made Yu Fang shudder.

Yu Tian and the family was even more terrified.

Lu Qian was a terrifying character. If he wanted to kill them all, then the entire family would really be wiped out.

"I'll...I'll talk! I'll talk!"

Yu Fang didn't dare to hide anything. He truthfully told Lu Qian everything about how he had invited Lu Xun to the Jin family's house for a drink and what happened after that.

He had thought about trying to push this responsibility to the Jin family, but Lu Qian wasn't easy to fool.

"You arranged for that Liu Yu, didn't you?"

After Yu Fang finished speaking, Lu Qian was filled with murder.

He knew his son's fetishes, and others were even more aware of it.

Lu Xun was a young man but he liked mature women. Yu Fang knew about this, so he purposely used this to attract Lu Xun to Jin Yang's house. Yu Fang could hide this from Jin Yang, but he couldn't hide it from Lu Qian.

"L.."

Yu Fang started trembling. "I just hoped that Young Master Lu could have fun."

"Have fun?"

Lu Qian looked even more murderous than before. "You agitated him so that he would go to Donghai, you call that hoping he could have fun?"

Yu Fang's mind was instantly blown to bits.

Lu Qian saw through everything instantly.

"Mr Lu, please spare me, I...AHH!"

Before Yu Fang could finish saying what he wanted to, Lu Qian threw his fist towards his head and Yu Fang's head turned to mush.

Red and white liquids started flowing out, causing Yu Tian and the rest of the family to scream in fright.

"Yu Fang!"

Yu Tian's eyes were bloodshot and he wanted to rush over. But Lu Qian glared at him and Yu Tian didn't dare to move. He could only look on as his son's body collapsed to the floor and died.

"How dare you make use of my son! The Yu family is really bold!" Lu Qian roared. His voice was as deafening and as loud as thunder.

Now he knew that Lu Xun had gone to Donghai and hadn't come back yet because something had probably happened to him in Donghai.

"Leave no one behind!"

Lu Qian scanned Yu Tian and his family, then turned and left.

After the doors were closed, Ice Dragon and Blood Dragon started their massacre.

The entire Yu family was wiped out.

It was blood everywhere.

Lu Qian had never imagined that the illegal circles of Tianhai included a place like Donghai.

He had heard about how this place was special and many factions had fought over it, but it had never bothered him.

From the looks of it, the person controlling Donghai was not an easy one to deal with.

"Don't worry, at most they would just capture Lu Xun, but they wouldn't dare to do anything to him," Ice Dragon tried to console Lu Qian. There was still the smell of blood on him, and he even still had blood on his face.

"It's just a tiny city, so if they dare to hurt Lu Xun, we'll turn them to ashes!" yelled Blood Dragon in solidarity.

Besides, Explosive Dragon was there too. Nobody in that small city would be able to deal with Explosive Dragon.

But Lu Qian was still uneasy.

He wasn't worried even if Master Fu was still in Shengcheng, because at least he knew all about Master Fu. But he didn't know anything about Donghai. He didn't know who was in control of Donghai and he didn't know what sort of

person their leader was.

If their leader was someone who didn't know how to behave properly, things could become tricky.

"Have the men we sent out come back yet?" Lu Qian had sent men to check out Donghai in the morning.

"They're on the way back, they should be reaching soon!"

Lu Qian couldn't sit still anymore and wanted to just kill his way into Donghai right now. But the men who went in the morning had returned and they came running in.

"Boss! We've gotten news from Donghai that they've sent Young Master Lu back to Linhai!"

"They've sent him back?"

"Yes, according to the news I received, the men from Donghai sent Young Master Lu back personally."

Lu Qian breathed a sigh of relief. So those people in Donghai knew how to behave and knew that it wouldn't do them well to offend him. As long as Lu Xun was fine.

But he wondered why Lu Xun hadn't even called him at all. Explosive Dragon hadn't called either. Why were these two so immature?

"Who's controlling Donghai now?" Lu Qian was quite curious. "I've never heard anything about their side before."

"Boss, just recently, the illegal circle of Donghai went through a massive change, and all the bosses of the past have disappeared. Apparently a young man named Jiang Ning is now controlling the whole place."



"Jiang Ning?"

Lu Qian frowned. He didn't recall anybody with this name.

He hadn't heard of anyone in the north with this name before either. Who was this guy?"I've checked already. This Jiang Ning doesn't have any powerful background. Apparently he was a homeless man, and now he's married into the Lin family of Donghai."

Lu Qian was even more surprised.

A homeless man? A man who married into his wife's family? Such a man could control all of Donghai's illegal cycle?

"A puppet?" Ice Dragon immediately guessed. "I think he's some powerful person's puppet. A homeless man! What a joke!"

He wasn't just a homeless man, but also a man who married into his wife's family. Which big shot would allow himself to have such an identity? It would be so embarrassing.

So they immediately concluded that Jiang Ning must be a puppet doing work for some powerful person.

"Investigate him! Make sure you check who's behind Jiang Ning!" ordered Lu Qian.

He then got up. "Since Lu Xun is fine, then we should continue what we were doing."

"Clean up Shengcheng!"

"Yes Boss!" shouted all his men.

Beside Zhang Cheng and a few other stubborn fellows, the rest had obediently surrendered. Once they had settled Zhang Cheng and the others, Lu Qian would be in full control of Shengcheng.

Lu Qian and his men were getting ready to make their move when they suddenly received a call from Linhai.

Lu Qian's expression immediately changed.

"What did you say? Lu Xun is dead?!" Lu Qian hit the roof.

Ice Dragon and Blood Dragon were even more shocked.

Lu Xun was dead?

Hadn't the men in Donghai sent Lu Xun and Explosive Dragon back to Linhai?
How could Lu Xun have died?

Lu Qian's expression grew nastier and nastier. The hand holding the phone trembled violently and his eyes instantly turned red.

After putting down the phone, Lu Qian didn't say anything. Then he suddenly flung the phone onto the floor and it smashed to pieces.

"Boss!" Blood Dragon called out.

"We're going back to Linhai!" Lu Qian practically spat every word out through clenched teeth. "Explosive Dragon is dead too!"

Blood Dragon and Ice Dragon were both stunned.

Explosive Dragon was dead too?

What on earth was going on?!

"We're going back to Linhai right now!"

Lu Qian didn't elaborate further. His wife had cried so miserably over the phone and couldn't speak properly at all, so he had to go back.

Lu Xun had died!

His only son had actually died!

And even his brother, Explosive Dragon, had also died!

Who did it?!

WHO?!

It was an uneasy night in Shengcheng.

It was as if something frightening was going to happen. Many people were kept on their toes, anxiously waiting as if doomsday was upon them.

In a quiet house in the mountains not too far from Shengcheng.

Master Fu was here.

He hadn't been poisoned at all. His cheeks were flushed and he looked good.

After he heard the reports, he sat in the pavilion and was silent for a long time.

"I wanted you to kill off Expositive Dragon and Lu Xun, then put the blame on Jiang Ning. I didn't expect him to walk into this plan himself," Master Fu said after a very long while. "I only wanted him to take the blame, but he actually did it himself."

His eyes darkened and he couldn't understand Jiang Ning anymore.

The less he understood, the more wary he became.

"Can he take the brunt of Lu Qian's fury?" asked Broken Sword.

Out of the five brothers that worked closely under Lu Qian, Broken Sword had killed two and Jiang Ning killed one. They were now left with only Blood Dragon and Ice Dragon.

But in reality, Broken Sword knew that Lu Qian was the strongest out of all of them.

"We'll find out once it happens. The most important thing now is to find out what Jiang Ning wants from me," replied Master Fu mysteriously.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Master Fu was really surprised. He didn't think Jiang Ning would make a move.

According to his plan, once Lu Xun and Explosive Dragon stepped into Donghai, he would get Broken Sword to kill Lu Xun.

He would leave Explosive Dragon to Jiang Ning.

He didn't expect Jiang Ning to be so aggressive.

He had just killed off both Explosive Dragon and Lu Xun without mercy.

He was a really vicious one.

He had underestimated Jiang Ning after all.

Master Fu was even more wary of Jiang Ning now.

He had set up this entire thing so that he could lure Jiang Ning in. Even if Jiang Ning didn't end up fighting Lu Qian, he would have helped to wipe out some of Lu Qian's fighting power.

He didn't expect Jiang Ning to be this fierce.

But if Jiang Ning won against Lu Qian, then Master Fu would have to do something.

"Interesting, very interesting." Master Fu poured a cup of tea for himself and laughed as he looked at the teacup. "The next generation is really promising."

Broken Sword didn't say anything.

After meeting Jiang Ning in person, he knew that Jiang Ning was very powerful, and his might was terrifying.

Broken Sword had reached an age where his body was slowly breaking down. He was still good enough to be considered half a grandmaster, but he couldn't tell what level Jiang Ning was at. He only knew that Jiang Ning wasn't any weaker than he was.

But it would be difficult for Jiang Ning to face Lu Qian, Ice Dragon and Blood Dragon all by himself.

Jiang Ning didn't have any backing from the north, so if Lu Qian really killed his way into Donghai, it might be very hard for Jiang Ning to get away.

But the fight between the illegal circles was cruel like that. You could be alive today and dead tomorrow, and that was nothing unusual.

Now everyone was focused on Linhai!

Meanwhile.

It was 3AM when Lu Qian got back to Linhai.

Every light in the Lu house was lit.

The crying never stopped.

There were two corpses on the floor covered with a white cloth. It was both creepy and depressing at the same time.

"AHHH...Xun'er, my precious Xun'er!"

Mrs Lu had burst out crying several times already. She was now seated on a chair and still murmuring to herself in a daze. The tears on her face had already smudged her thick makeup.

"Master Lu is back!"

Someone shouted from outside, and Lu Qian quickly entered the house with Blood Dragon and Ice Dragon.

Mrs Lu looked up with a start and looked like a vengeful ghost.

"Lu Qian! You bastard!"

She pounced over and started hitting Lu Qian uncontrollably. "You couldn't even protect your own son! You're so useless! ARGHH!"

Lu Qian pushed his wife aside. "Get out of the way!"

He told his men to drag her away. He walked over to the corpse and pulled the white sheet back.

Lu Qian's body shook violently in that instant.

It was Lu Xun!

He was really dead.

Lu Xun was lying cold and rigid on the floor. His face was pale and his eyes were still opened wide and filled with great fear.

What terrifying things did he see before he died?

Lu Qian clenched his fists tightly and even his lips were trembling.

He pulled the other white sheet back. Explosive Dragon's four limbs were broken and his face was so swollen he was almost unrecognizable. His eyes were also wide open and he had died terribly!

The fear on his face was as apparent as Lu Xun's.

"Explosive Dragon..."

Blood Dragon clenched his fists tightly and his knuckles cracked loudly. "Who killed my brother?!"

Lu Xun was dead, and now Explosive Dragon was dead too!

Only two of the five brothers remained.

"Who sent them back?"

Lu Qian couldn't suppress his anger at all. The murder in his voice was about to bubble over.

"A few men from Donghai. They said Young Master Lu had gotten lost and ended up in Donghai by accident, so they sent Young Master Lu home, but we didn't expect..."

They didn't expect to find corpses!

"Where are they?" roared Lu Qian.

"They...they have left."

All the servants in the house were shivering from fright.

They were already in shock after they saw Lu Xun and Explosive Dragon's bodies. Now Lu Qian was exploding with fury, so who dared to offend him?

If anybody said one wrong word, he would die for sure!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Lu Qian didn't say anything.

The more he kept silent, the scarier he was.

The attack of a silent lion was scarier than a roaring one.

"Boss! I want to avenge Explosive Dragon!" Blood Dragon roared. "Donghai...I'm going to Donghai right now! I'm going to wipe them out!"

Ice Dragon was roaring too. "I'm going to wipe all those bastards out!"

"A life for a life!"

Lu Qian remained silent.

He squatted down and held Lu Xun in his arms, as if he was hoping the warmth of his own body could bring Lu Xun back to life again.

But that icy feeling he felt when he touched Lu Xun's arm told him that Lu Xun was already dead.

His son was dead!

His one and only son was dead!

"Boss!" Blood Dragon saw that Lu Qian wasn't responding at all. He roared, "I want to make them pay!"

Lu Qian was silent for a while and his voice had become hoarse.

"Prepare a funeral for Lu Xun and Explosive Dragon."

He looked up at Blood Dragon and Ice Dragon. "We're holding it in Donghai!"

"I'm going to bury Donghai's illegal circle with my son and my brother!"

News spread like wildfire.

In just two hours, the sun hadn't even risen yet when all of Linhai and Tianhai's illegal circles found out what happened.

Lu Qian's only son had died, and he had died in Donghai!

His brother, Explosive Dragon, had also died in Donghai!

Donghai suddenly became the most terrifying place in the world. That was a place they must never go to!

At the same time, everyone pitied Donghai because Lu Qian, Blood Dragon and Ice Dragon were still alive.

This forbidden territory was going to disappear soon.

Lu Qian had already sent word out that he was going to hold Lu Xun and Explosive Dragon's funeral in Donghai. He was going to decapitate the leader of Donghai's illegal circle as an offering to his son!

In Shengcheng.

Zhang Cheng couldn't sleep at all when he heard the news.

He had already gone through more than ten cigarettes and the cigarette butts were all over the floor. His eyes were bloodshot and his emotions were very conflicted.

"Boss, Jiang Ning..." Gao Fei gulped and found it hard to believe. "He...actually really killed Lu Xun and Explosive Dragon!"

He had actually dared to kill them!

"That's who Jiang Ning really is." Zhang Cheng's voice was low and quiet. "He's afraid of nothing. Master Fu and Lu Qian are nothing but ants to him."

When he thought about how he had been so arrogant and tried to take a piece of Donghai for himself, Zhang Cheng shuddered at the thought.

If Jiang Ning hadn't looked down on fighting with ants like himself, he would be a rotten corpse by now.

Master Fu was already old, so even if he returned, it would be hard for him to block Jiang Ning.

This time Lu Qian had attacked Shengcheng while Master Fu had escaped. And now Jiang Ning had retaliated so fiercely!

Once Donghai was known as a forbidden territory, nobody could get through to it anymore.

Another cigarette reached its end and Zhang Cheng only threw it aside frantically when he felt it burn his fingers.

"What do we do now?"

They had been waiting to die, waiting for Lu Qian to wipe them out. But now Lu Qian was probably focused on killing Jiang Ning.

If Jiang Ning could hold up against Lu Qian, then Tianhai's illegal circles were his. If Jiang Ning failed, then Zhang Cheng was still going to die.

"Let's go to Donghai!" There was suddenly a look of madness in Zhang Cheng's eyes.

"Go to Donghai?!"

Gao Fei's heart nearly stopped. "Everyone is desperately trying to cut ties with Donghai now. If we go to Donghai..."

"That's right! Let's go to Donghai!"

Zhang Cheng looked a little threatening, but he was more hysterical than anything else. "Let's take a gamble! If we win, then we'll live! If we lose, then we'll die! Since we might die either way, then I'm going to bring a few of those assholes from Linhai down with me!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

The news had spread like a virus, and everyone in Linhai and Tianhai's illegal circles knew all about what happened.

Everyone knew that Lu Qian had only one son and he thoroughly spoiled this son. But now, this one and only son was dead!

And he had died in Donghai!

Not just that. Even his brother, Explosive Dragon, had also died in Donghai.

Lu Qian had attacked so fiercely recently and managed to chase away Master Fu, the one who controlled Tianhai for twenty over years. Who dared to offend him now?

This person in Donghai was really tired of living!

Everyone in Tianhai's illegal circles were worried for their own lives. They quickly cut ties with Donghai even if they had none to begin with.

Everyone in Linhai were as furious as Lu Qian was. They all wanted to follow Lu Qian to Donghai so that they could raze Donghai's illegal circle to the ground.

At this time, Zhang Cheng actually said that anyone who wanted to make trouble in Donghai would have to fight him first!

To everyone else, Zhang Cheng was just asking to die.

He was clearly tired of living since he dared to agitated the Lu family like this.

But Lu Qian couldn't be bothered with Zhang Cheng at all. He was only thinking about how he would kill Jiang Ning and everyone in Donghai's illegal circle so that they could be buried along with his son!

Early in the morning, the funeral procession left with great fanfare from the Lu house in Linhai and headed towards Donghai.

There were more than ten cars with white cloth hanging from them. The atmosphere was so heavy, it was difficult to breathe.

Lu Qian always did everything openly.

He didn't intend to take revenge secretly at all.

He wanted every single person to know that he, Lu Qian, was coming for them!

Whoever killed his son would have to pay for it with his own life!

Before the illegal circle of Donghai became nervous, the legal circle started panicking first.

Governor Zhang put aside all the work he had and quickly ran to look for Jiang Ning.

"Mr Jiang, it's too dangerous to stay in Donghai, you have to leave for the moment!"

Governor Zhang had a grim expression on his face. He could use his own influence to block any legal attacks, but what about the illegal side?

He knew a thing or two about how cruel things could get in the illegal circle. It was no joke!

When a bunch of psychos went crazy, everyone would suffer!

He had already sent his men out to guard the border so that Lu Qian and his men would have trouble entering Donghai, but he didn't know how long his men could hold up, since the one backing the Lu Family was...

"Why should I leave?" Jiang Ning was sipping tea while sitting on the sofa. He glanced up at Governor Zhang. "Are you very free lately?"

"No, I'm so busy getting investors in and doing inspections...but none of this is important now," Governor Zhang said anxiously. "Mr Jiang, your safety is the most important!"

"Most important my ass," cursed Jiang Ning. "If those things you're doing aren't important, then what's important? Just focus on what you need to do."

"But..."

"You want to quit?"

Jiang Ning narrowed his eyes.

"No..."

"Then go back to what you were doing. The citizens of Donghai are waiting for you to do the work, don't take a salary for nothing. Since when did you have to worry about me?"

Jiang Ning calmly went on, "You're quite far off from Yuming when it comes to this."

Governor Zhang didn't know what to do anymore. But he didn't dare to say

He washed the cherries and leisurely made his way upstairs. Lin Yuzhen was busy in the office and didn't have time to entertain Jiang Ning.

"The cherries are very sweet."

"Got it. You can leave it there, I'll eat them later."

Lin Yuzhen didn't even lift her head.

After a while, she could feel Jiang Ning walking over. She looked up to see two cherries in Jiang Ning's hand in front of her mouth.

"Eat two."

Lin Yuzhen blushed a little as she obediently opened her mouth and Jiang Ning put the cherries in.

"Thank you hubby."

"Good girl."

Jiang Ning smiled. "I won't disturb you. You need to know when to rest, ok?"

"Ok."

Lin Yuzhen's face grew redder.

The cherries in her mouth tasted particularly sweet.

Jiang Ning walked out of her office and went downstairs. His phone started ringing.

Brother Gou could barely contain his excitement on the other end of the line.

"Big Boss, we've prepared the present already, why are they taking so long to come!"

"Wait for them on their way here," replied Jiang Ning. "Don't let these jinxes enter Donghai."

"Got it!"

After he hung up, Jiang Ning narrowed his eyes slightly. "Master Fu, have you thought about how you're going to thank me?"

There were more than ten cars on the highway leading to Donghai. The air was extremely tense.

Lu Qian had a dark expression on his face. The men seated around him didn't even dare to breathe too loudly.

Lu Xun and Explosive Dragon's bodies were in coffins in the car at the back.

Lu Qian had already decided that he was going to offer the heads of everyone in Donghai's illegal circle to them.

"Boss, we can't let that Jiang Ning die so easily!"

The veins on Blood Dragon's forehead bulged and a murderous air emanated from him. "I'm going to make his life a living hell! I'm going to torture him for a few years before letting him die!"

Blood Dragon knew many ways to torture a person. He wasn't going to let Jiang Ning just die like that.

"And all those people by his side, his family, his wife, his friends – they all have to die!" Ice Dragon added on in a cold voice. "I'm going to make them pay a painful price!"

This wasn't just revenge for Lu Xun and Explosive Dragon. They wanted everyone to know what would happen if they offended the Lu family.

If they didn't retaliate aggressively, then that would be as good as telling others that they could come and kill anyone in the Lu family anytime!

Including Lu Qian's own son!

Lu Qian remained silent.

His eyes were blood shot, and the murderous air was kept within his heart. But everyone could feel the suppressed anger that threatened to explode. Once it exploded, it would be such a terrifying thing to behold.

They had brought more than 300 men with them, and they were all the best the Lu family had.

And of course, Lu Qian, Blood Dragon and Ice Dragon were also ferocious killing machines themselves.

If the three of them joined hands, even Broken Sword would have trouble dealing with them. Once they reached Donghai, they could easily sweep through the land and raze this city's illegal circle to the ground!

Lu Qian looked out of the car window with an icy cold stare.

"My son...I'm going to kill everyone in Donghai's illegal circle to accompany you!"

BAM!

Just as he was thinking about this, the car leading the way suddenly turned sharply, lost control, spun twice in the air and crashed onto the road.

There was a loud blast and there were sparks flying everywhere.

All the cars behind immediately hit the brakes.

"What happened?!" Blood Dragon wound the car window down and roared angrily.

Who on earth made a mistake at this time?

He focused in front and realized that there was a hole in the road ahead and that was blocking their way.

Blood Dragon instantly narrowed his eyes.

"Boss! They're from Donghai!"

Lu Qian smiled coldly, and his lips twitched.

He knew that the folks from Donghai weren't going to sit there and do nothing. They would definitely do something, so were they trying to block his way now?

But could they really block him?

"I don't care how many of them there are...kill them all!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

All the car doors opened and everyone dashed out.

All of them were in dark suits ready for a funeral with weapons in hand. They were fierce and violent!

Soon enough, the entire road was filled with people, and all their eyes were fixed in front.

There was a chair placed on an empty part of the road. Jiang Ning was sitting on it and happily sunbathing.

His head was slightly tilted as he leaned against the chair and watched the men on the other side get out of their cars. He smiled calmly and said, "I heard the Lu family from Linhai is coming to Donghai?"

"You're the ones?"

Lu Qian's eyes narrowed slightly as he stared at Jiang Ning. This was the first time he was seeing Jiang Ning.

He didn't expect Jiang Ning to be so young.

"My son Lu Xun...was killed by you!" he yelled in a cold voice and ignored Jiang Ning's question.

"That's right," Jiang Ning didn't intend to deny that. "He deserved it."

"Then my brother, Explosive Dragon..."

"Same, I killed him too. He overestimated himself."

Jiang Ning was still seated on the chair. Behind him stood Brother Gou and the wolves.

There was nobody else besides them.

There were a total of thirty one of them!

Lu Qian's expression was extremely nasty now. He thought that Jiang Ning might try to defend himself or plead for mercy. Lu Qian thought they had come outside the city to meet him because Jiang Ning didn't want to embarrass himself within Donghai, and he was here to appease Lu Qian.

He didn't expect Jiang Ning to challenge him like this!

He had only brought thirty men to block him?

"Boss, I'm going to kill him!" Blood Dragon roared and was about to dash over because he couldn't stand it anymore.

"Wait a while."

Jiang Ning raised a hand. "What's the hurry? I'm not done talking, so why so anxious?"

"Since I heard that the head of the Lu family was coming, as the host, I had to prepare a little present for you."

Jiang Ning waved his hand and the men behind him stood to one side. Three coffins appeared behind them.

Lu Qian was going to kill him!

Jiang Ning...was asking to be killed!

"A family should always stay together," said Jiang Ning. "I said it before, I don't allow anyone to make trouble in Donghai. But no matter how many times I say this, there are always people who don't listen. Since you're here, let me say it one last time."

"You're outrageous!" Ice Dragon roared furiously. There was no way he could hold it in anymore.

His wrist shook and he gripped a dagger in his hand tightly.

"I'm going to kill you right now! You can save this coffin for yourself!"

SWOOSH!

Ice Dragon dashed out!

"I'm going to kill you!"

Blood Dragon couldn't take it anymore either. He gave a low shout, raised his fists and dashed out with Ice Dragon. They were both headed straight for Jiang Ning!

But Jiang Ning continued sitting on that chair.

"Gou, you guys can go ahead...and kill them."

"Got it!"

Brother Gou and the wolves instantly became excited. They were like men who

were seeing a woman for the first time after abstaining from sex for too many years.

Thirty of them were thirty vicious wolves!

All of them dashed out.

They knew that Ice Dragon and his brothers were for Jiang Ning to kill, so they didn't block them. They went past the two dragons and headed for the 300 men behind.

"Attack!!"

Roars filled the air.

Thirty of them were dashing towards 300 men. Lu Qian's men were all furious now.

They had never felt so insulted before!

They had even taken down Shengcheng. This tiny Donghai actually dared to challenge them like this?

Meanwhile, Ice Dragon and Blood Dragon had come to where Jiang Ning was.

"Go to hell!"

Blood Dragon's fist was headed for Jiang Ning's head, while Ice Dragon's dagger was headed for Jiang Ning's heart!

Both moves were fatal moves!

They were vicious!

Merciless!

Jiang Ning remained seated on his chair and even crossed one leg on the other, as if he didn't even know what was happening.

This man dared to be so audacious?

What right did he have to be so audacious?!

Ice Dragon was roaring in his heart as he gripped the dagger in his hand even more tightly than before.

Lu Qian had been staring at Jiang Ning all this while when his eyes suddenly widened and he yelled out, "Be careful!"

Of course he wasn't saying that to Jiang Ning.

The air around Jiang Ning had suddenly changed.

It was as if a whirlpool appeared from nowhere and suddenly increased in size to become a black hole that swallowed everything up. All this happened in an instant!

Jiang Ning made his move!

He suddenly floated up and stretched one hand out. It seemed to be so slow, yet it was as quick as lightning!

He grabbed Ice Dragon's wrist at once and a tremendous force was unleashed.

CRAAACK!

Ice Dragon's expression instantly changed. He knew that Jiang Ning had just broken his wrist with one move.

How was this possible?

He was trained in martial arts for the past twenty years and he was way stronger than an ordinary person. How did Jiang Ning manage to...

"You still have time to think about other things?"

There was a voice that suddenly spoke next to Ice Dragon and he snapped out of his thoughts, only to see that Jiang Ning's foot had already kicked him hard in the chest.

BAM!

He went flying out!

"Ice Dragon!"

Blood Dragon got a shock. The fist headed for Jiang Ning's head started moving at a faster speed.

BAM!

Jiang Ning stood where he was without moving at all. He threw a punch too, but he was faster and fiercer than Blood Dragon!

"AHH!!"

Their fists smashed hard against each other's, but Blood Dragon couldn't help but shout loudly and moved back several steps from the impact.

Both brothers' faces were filled with fear, as if they had seen a ghost.

This wasn't possible!

This wasn't possible at all!

How could a young fellow like Jiang Ning be this powerful?

And furthermore, they had never even heard of this man. When did such a scary monster appear in Tianhai?

SWOOSH!

Lu Qian dashed over and all three of them were standing together as they looked at Jiang Ning warily.

Now they knew without a doubt that Jiang Ning had indeed killed Explosive Dragon.

Explosive Dragon wouldn't have lasted long against someone with Jiang Ning's ability.

He was too scary!

"Kill him!" Lu Qian gave a low shout. He didn't care who Jiang Ning was. As long as this man killed his son, he would have to pay the price for doing so.

Three of them made their move at the same time, unleashing every bit of ferocity they had. They were attacking even more fiercely than the time they faced Broken Sword!

When he saw how the three of them had gone completely insane, Jiang Ning felt his shoulder suddenly move slightly as all the joints in his body started cracking like a popcorn machine.

"I can finally get some exercise!"

BOOOOM!!

After he said that, Jiang Ning stepped so hard on the ground that he left a foot print behind.

He had made his move!

He was like a missile!

Jiang Ning ignored Lu Qian and Blood Dragon and looked straight at Ice Dragon who was right in front. He sent out one punch!

It was too fast!

Ice Dragon's face instantly paled. He wanted to move backwards but it was too late. He felt like Jiang Ning's fist was coming over very slowly, but how was it that...he couldn't dodge it?!

BAM!

This fist landed hard on Ice Dragon's chest. It didn't look like it carried much energy, but the moment the fist touched his chest, the terrifying force it carried made Ice Dragon's face instantly turn red.

It was as if an intense wave was sent into his body from his chest, sending shockwave after shockwave, and each shockwave was fiercer than the last!

His heart!

Couldn't take it at all!

"AHHH..."

Ice Dragon had broken so many ribs. He went flying out and spewed fresh blood from his mouth while still in mid air.

He crashed onto the ground and looked up. The eyes he used to look at Jiang Ning were filled with horror.

He wanted to say something, but all that came out of his mouth was blood and some bits of his internal organs...

Before he could say anything, Ice Dragon convulsed a few times, then stopped breathing.

Lu Qian and Blood Dragon felt their hair stand on end.

This one fist was a little too formidable, wasn't it?

Just one punch was all it took to kill Ice Dragon!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Lu Qian suddenly felt that he had been tricked.

Why did he come to Donghai?

Was it possible that Master Fu didn't know that there was a terrifying monster hiding in Donghai?

Master Fu definitely knew!

Lu Qian finally realized that Master Fu had purposely left Shengcheng so that Lu Qian would be lured to Tianhai and offend this terrifying monster!

One punch!

He only used one punch to kill Ice Dragon. Even when Broken Sword was at his peak, he probably couldn't achieve this.

But Jiang Ning didn't look like he had used a lot of strength...

Fear!

He was here to take revenge, but there was nothing else left in Lu Qian's heart besides fear. A fear that he couldn't suppress.

Even when he was faced with that powerful person in the north, he had never felt fear like he did right now.

Donghai was a forbidden territory.

He suddenly thought of this.

Why didn't Master Fu touch Donghai?

It wasn't because he looked down on Donghai, but because he didn't dare to!

Lu Qian suddenly understood everything, but it was too late.

"Ice Dragon!"

Blood Dragon's eyes were bloodshot as he watched Ice Dragon get killed by Jiang Ning before his very eyes. He had lost his mind now.

Explosive Dragon had just died, and now Ice Dragon was dead too. Out of the five brothers, he was the last one left!

"I'm going to kill you!"

Blood Dragon's bulky figure made a mad rush for Jiang Ning like a man who lived in the wild, and every step he took shook the ground.

Lu Qian's face paled, "Blood Dragon!"

He wanted to stop Blood Dragon, but there was no way Blood Dragon could remain calm now.

"DIE!!"

Blood Dragon swung his fists out and smashed them towards Jiang Ning with all his might.

"You're asking for it."

Jiang Ning met his attack with one punch again.

BAM!

Their fists violently crashed against each other's again.

The impact was like an explosion, and Blood Dragon's fist was instantly covered with blood.

"I'm going to kill you..."

But Blood Dragon didn't retreat at all. He had gone mad, so he couldn't feel any pain. There was only fury and a psychotic murderous look in his eyes.

He lifted his other fist and continued his attack!

BAM!

It was still one punch from Jiang Ning.

Blood Dragon howled. Both his fists were broken from the impact.

You could even see his bones!

There was blood flowing out from his wrists and his hands were clearly broken.

Lu Qian's heart nearly leapt out of his mouth when he saw this.

Too scary!

Jiang Ning was too frightening!

"Attack!!!"

There were even more terrifying sounds coming from behind.

Lu Qian spun around violently and felt like his legs were going to give way.

Brother Gou and the other twenty nine men...no! Those were thirty wild beasts!

They were like wolves attacking a flock of sheep, and were now killing off all his men!

It only took one move each. These moves were simple yet incredibly powerful. These moves were all fatal ones, and very clean moves.

Brother Gou stretched one hand out quickly to grab one man's neck. The other hand twisted the man's neck hard and with a crack, that man's neck was broken!

Brother Gou didn't even bother looking at the dead man. He moved on to throw a punch at another man's temples!

BAM!

Another one down!

Lu Qian felt a deep-seated fear coming from within him.

He watched as his men fell one after another.

He watched as more than 300 men were howling and wanted to escape but couldn't escape because the wolves were running after them. He watched as his men cried and begged for mercy, but none of them could escape death...

"AHH!!! AHHHHH!"

Lu Qian lost it and started shrieking as his expression became more and more distorted. "Jiang Ning! Who the hell are you?!"

"Do you know who the one backing me is?!"

He continued to shriek but didn't dare to attack.

He was more powerful than Ice Dragon and Blood Dragon, but in front of Jiang Ning, he was very certain that he would definitely die.

He stared at Jiang Ning but kept moving back.

Jiang Ning didn't seem interested in going after him.

"I don't know and I don't want to know," replied Jiang Ning calmly. "But if he dares to make trouble in Donghai, then he will meet the same fate as these two corpses."



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Lu Qian felt all his hair stand on end.

Jiang Ning was too domineering!

He was really audacious!

He didn't care about the one backing him?

The howls and screams behind him continued. There were probably fewer than a hundred men left standing out of the 300 he brought. And barely any time had passed!

He looked towards Donghai and felt that it was a dark whirlpool. It was a black hole!

Anyone who went in would be broken to pieces!

"Ah...AAHHHHHHHHH!"

Lu Qian screamed and started running away in a panic like he had gone insane. He didn't care about Blood Dragon and Ice Dragon's dead bodies on the ground, and he didn't seem to care that his own son's body was still in the car.

He ran off to the side and continued running even though he was covered in mud...

Jiang Ning didn't intend to chase after him at all.

This ant wasn't worth his while.

"Master Fu, this present is sincere enough, right?"

Jiang Ning went back to his chair and his expression was all calm, as if he had really just squished two ants. They couldn't cause a single ripple in his emotions.

Brother Gou's side had reached their peak of excitement after going on a killing spree.

When the 300 men saw that Blood Dragon and Ice Dragon had met a terrible end and Lu Qian had gone scurrying off in fear, none of them could hold up anymore. All their fighting spirit was gone.

They all ran like crazy without even turning back or picking up a shoe that was left behind. They shrieked and ran as quickly as they could, so that they could go as faraway from Donghai as possible.

They never wanted to come near Donghai ever again, and they never wanted to hear the word Donghai ever again...

There was a strong smell of blood in the air, and even the wind couldn't blow it away.

Brother Gou and the rest were parting as their bodies trembled. It wasn't because they were fearful, but because...they were so excited!

They never imagined that they could become so strong!

They never dreamt that Jiang Ning could be this strong!

This man was really a god!

Donghai was forbidden territory.

This was something etched deep in their hearts.

Donghai was a territory that Jiang Ning had created and was a place that they protected.

Whoever dared to make trouble here would die, regardless of who he was!

"Clear the place, let's go."

Jiang Ning had taught them what he should have. He was quite pleased with Brother Gou and the wolves' performance in this battle.

Jiang Ning left with the wolves. There were several cars from Linhai that were still parked on the road, but not a single man was left standing.

The stench of blood in the air was enough to make one feel like puking.

Meanwhile, Zhang Cheng was on his way over.

"Hurry up! Drive faster!"

He yelled loudly, "Even if I die, I'm going to fight it out with that blood Lu Qian! One of them would make us break even, if I kill two, then I'll profit...AHH!"

The car braked suddenly before he could finish his sentence.

Zhang Cheng knocked his head against the car door and it started to swell up.

"B-b-boss..."

Gao Fei was in the driver's seat and his voice trembled as he gripped the steering wheel tightly. He could feel a chill down his spine.

It was that place again!

They had been attacked by Jiang Ning in this same place.

But now, the ones who were attacked were Lu Qian's men!

"What the..."

Zhang Cheng stuck his head out and looked from the window. He instantly felt numb all over.

There were several cars with Linhai licence plates parked on the road, and next to those cars...

"哇——"

Zhang Cheng opened the door only for the terrible stench of blood to hit his nose. He couldn't take it at all and started retching.

Gao Fei and the rest had gotten out of the car and similarly started puking as their stomachs churned.

All of them ended up kneeling on the ground to puke before they barely managed to clamber back into the car and quickly wound up the windows. All of them were pale in the face and couldn't stop their bodies from trembling in fear.

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

They didn't dare to think about the scene outside the car, and didn't dare to think about what happened.

That was so scary!

Lu Qian had come with his two best fighters as well as all his best men. But in the end, instead of taking revenge, they had entered a slaughterhouse.

They had walked into a slaughterhouse on their own accord.

Zhang Cheng suddenly felt his stomach churn again.

"Keep those windows closed!" He tried hard to stop himself from puking and didn't dare to look out. "Turn around and leave! Drive away!"

He didn't dare to look outside anymore, but all he could see when he closed his eyes was that bloodbath he saw earlier.

Gao Fei's hands were still trembling as he turned the car around and drove back to Shengcheng. Several miles later, he could still feel his legs shivering, and his leg was still shaking as he stepped on the accelerator.

Donghai was forbidden territory.

From today onwards, this was an unrefutable fact.

This was stepping all over the authority and power that Lu Qian and his men had built.

They had also seen Ice Dragon and Blood Dragon's bodies on the road as well as the coffins that contained Lu Xun and Explosive Dragon's bodies. They didn't spot Lu Qian, but it wasn't hard to imagine what would have happened to him.

Zhang Cheng was really terrified. It was a terror that rose from his bones.

Gao Fei had initially thought that Jiang Ning was dead meat, but now he kept his mouth shut. He was afraid that he would start puking again if he opened it.

He told himself that he must never offend Jiang Ning. He would rather kill himself than to incur the wrath of this monster!

Someone came to clear up the place soon after and it was like nothing had ever happened. But this news couldn't be kept a secret, and nobody bothered to hide what happened.

Lu Qian had perished.

Everyone who was watching and waiting for this powerful man who went with great fanfare from Linhai to wipe out everyone in Donghai's illegal circle were all silent.

Anyone who mentioned Donghai would shudder.

Even Lu Qian perished here.

Lu Qian had been powerful enough to chase Master Fu out, but perished in tiny Donghai.

Explosive Dragon had been killed, Ice Dragon had been killed, Blood Dragon had been killed. Even Lu Qian's one and only son had been killed!

All because they had made trouble in this forbidden territory called Donghai.

Lu Qian had vanished and was probably not going to live for long.

All the bosses that had surrendered to Lu Qian were suddenly in a panic again.

They weren't worried that Master Fu would return. They were afraid that Jiang Ning of Donghai would come and settle his feud with them.

After all, they had betrayed the illegal circles of Tianhai. But Jiang Ning didn't do anything.

There was no reaction from Donghai at all. It was as if nothing happened.

Donghai continued to attract investors, build up their infrastructure, and improve order in the city. The signs of life increased and the feeling of bliss continued to rise.

It seemed like absolutely nobody knew that something so earth shattering had happened just outside Donghai.

At the same time, Linhai's illegal circles were in great fear.

Everyone was afraid that Donghai would make a counterattack and take revenge on them.

Lu Qian had perished, so who else would be able to fight against Donghai's might?

But Donghai didn't budge.

Soon enough, more information came out. Donghai was a forbidden territory in that you were forbidden from making trouble there. As long as you didn't make

trouble there, you were safe.

Nobody knew where this information came from, but many people breathed a sigh of relief when they heard this.

Jiang Ning didn't care about what people said outside of Donghai. He just went back to living his life after that night.

Brother Gou and the rest were still not tired, so they went back to training even more insanely than before.


They were a bunch of nutcases who had tasted the sweet taste of victory, and they were only going to become crazier...

Lu Qian didn't dare to return to Linhai.

He didn't dare to stay in Tianhai either. These two places were now extremely dangerous for him.

He was worried that Jiang Ning would come after him and wipe his entire family out.

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

A sly rabbit has more than one hole. Lu Qian only breathed a small sigh of relief after he managed to hide himself in an old hideout he had prepared many years ago.

All his brothers were dead.

His only son was also dead.

And they all died in the hands of that terrifying man, Jiang Ning.

The moment he thought of how Jiang Ning had made his attack, he felt a chill down his spine.

"He's too powerful!"

Lu Qian took a deep breath. "Even those highly skilled fighters who work for the north may not be this powerful either."

He had seen highly skilled fighters before. He knew how terrifying those highly skilled martial artists could be.

The more he thought about it, the more he felt that Jiang Ning was more complicated than he realized.

"I have to go to the north. I've lost too much this time, that man will come after me."

He had not only lost Tianhai's illegal circles, but he was probably going to lose Linhai too. Without enough clout on his side, it would be hard for him to even survive.

Lu Qian expression fell when he thought about that man's temperament. The price to pay for what he did this time was going to be great.

But now both Linhai and Tianhai were places he couldn't stay in, so he had to leave.

He took a deep breath, grabbed a bottle of mineral water from the fridge, and chugged the whole bottle down.

He had run all the way here without eating or drinking anything. He was really tired now, but he didn't dare to rest.

"Jiang Ning...I will come back to take revenge!"

Lu Qian threw the bottle of water aside and walked out of the door.

The moment he opened the door, Lu Qian felt a chill behind him. A dangerous air was coming towards him.

DANG!

Sparks flew everywhere.

Lu Qian didn't even turn his head. He immediately drew a dagger from his belt and swung it behind him.

The two blades clashed against each other and created sparks that were especially bright in the dark night.

"Broken Sword!" Lu Qian shouted, his eyes bulging. "You've come to kill me?!"

"Your brothers are all dead, so I'm here to help you reunite with them."

There was an icy voice in the darkness.

Broken Sword quietly walked out from the darkness. His face was calm and he had a broken sword in his hand. The tip of the sword was gone and it looked fairly old, but countless people had died by this sword...

"You? You're old and tired now, and you want to kill me? Dream on!"

Lu Qian laughed coldly as he gripped his dagger tightly and pretended to look like he was going to fight to the bitter end when he was actually prepared to run for his life.

He had to escape!

He had no idea if Broken Sword had laid any other traps for him. Perhaps Broken Sword wouldn't lay a trap, but Master Fu would.

Once they had decided to come for him, they wouldn't let him escape so easily.

"Run!" Lu Qian became determined when he saw Broken Sword about to make his move. He flicked his wrist hard and the dagger in his hand flew towards Broken Sword's face.

He couldn't think so much anymore and just turned to run.

Master Fu knew about this hideout a long time ago, but Lu Qian never used it until now.

Lu Qian didn't care anymore. He had just made a few steps out when he suddenly felt his legs go weak and he nearly fell.

"You...you poisoned the water!"

That bottle of water was completely sealed. Lu Qian didn't dare to drink any other water. But a brand new bottle of water still turned out to be problematic.

The drug took effect very quickly. Lu Qian felt his head spin and collapsed on the floor. He had no more strength to escape.

Broken Sword slowly walked over and looked down at Lu Qian. There was still no expression on his face.

"You two...are you two trying to force the two powers to fight?!" Lu Qian asked angrily as he panted heavily.

"When has the fight ever stopped?"

Broken Sword didn't bother talking to him anymore. He swung the sword in his hand and sent his head flying.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

In the house up the mountains outside of Shengcheng.

There was a head placed on the tea table. That was Lu Qian's head.

Master Fu looked at this head and didn't seem bothered by the blood splattering all over the tea table. He calmly said, "You've been eliminated."

"Do you know why you've been eliminated?"

He sounded like he was talking to someone who was still alive, as if Lu Qian wasn't dead. "You were too rash."

"Since you could hold it in for more than a decade, why couldn't you hold it in for a few more years? We've sold our lives to others and now you've even lost your life."

Master Fu waved his hands and Broken Sword took Lu Qian's head away.

There was still blood all over the tea table, but Master Fu didn't seem to care. He continued to make tea leisurely.

But he had a grim expression on his face, as if

he was mulling over a problem.

He had guessed how things would end, but the way things arrived at this end was beyond anything he had imagined.

Too powerful.

That was the only thought Master Fu had in his mind.

Jiang Ning was too powerful.

He was so powerful, he was terrifying.

He made everyone fear him.

The Lu family's power was unparalleled in Linhai. Even though Master Fu had Broken Sword, he could only ensure that both sides remained in a deadlock.

But as they grew older, Master Fu and Broken Sword would be no match for Lu Qian in just a few more years. When that happened, Master Fu would eventually have to give up Shengcheng's illegal circle.

But now Lu Qian was dead, and all his best men were all dead too.

All this was because of one Jiang Ning!

Jiang Ning had only appeared barely three months ago and looked completely harmless.

"I had managed to borrow a really good knife, but this is a knife that's impossible to tame."

Master Fu started to have a headache.

He knew what Jiang Ning meant when he decided not to kill Lu Qian. This was Jiang Ning's response to Master Fu after he had entered this game.

He had expressed his sincerity, so what about Master Fu?

"Everyone says I'm a wily old fox. And you? You're a wily young fox."

Master Fu broke into a smile. There was no hatred nor malice on his face. He only had admiration and respect.

Broken Sword returned. The murderous air around him remained as terrifying as ever, and most people would not go anywhere near him.

"What do you intend to do next?" His voice

remained as cold as distant as always.

"Go back to Shengcheng," replied Master Fu.

Broken Sword was silent for a few moments.

"The north is getting impatient."

Master Fu laughed coldly.

When was the north ever patient?

All these years, Master Fu had been earning so much money without a single complaint. In the end?

What did they do to him? Did they think that he didn't know?

He wasn't too old yet and could still get work done, so he was still useful to them. But Lu Qian's attack this time had put a lot of pressure on Master Fu, and the north was very displeased with him.

The people above him didn't always care about winning or losing, but they cared a lot about reputation. Master Fu's disappearance embarrassed them, and so they were very displeased with him.

If not for the huge benefits involved, there was no way they would have allowed Master Fu to do something like that.

But what would happen in a few years down the road?

When Master Fu became too old, he would be like a tiger with no teeth, and wouldn't even be eligible to guard the door.

"Perhaps this is an opportunity."

Master Fu finally broke the silence and he looked seriously at Broken Sword. "You've followed me for more than twenty years and you don't owe me anything. If you can leave now, leave."

Broken Sword shook his head and didn't say anything.

"People like me will never meet with a good end."

A smile remained on Master Fu's face and he didn't look fearful at all. "Once you're a dog for someone else, you might look glamorous on the outside, but you know how much suffering and pain one has to go through."

Master Fu didn't say anything. He just looked at this old buddy of his and sighed.

"Let's go back."

Master Fu had always been a decisive man. He took Lu Qian's head and returned to Shengcheng.

There was an uproar in Shengcheng's illegal circle again!

Master Fu was back!

And he brought Lu Qian's head along with him!

What did that mean?

Master Fu was alright! The one who met with a tragedy and died was Lu Qian. Lu Qian had attacked them so aggressively, but now he didn't even get to die in one good piece.

All those who had betrayed Shengcheng and surrendered to Lu Qian were even more afraid now.

They were afraid that Master Fu would come back for them, and they were afraid that Broken Sword's sword would fall on their necks and wipe them out.

Even Zhang Cheng felt anxious even though he hadn't turned his back on Master Fu.

They knew that Jiang Ning was the one who killed the rest of the Lu family, but Master Fu...was not someone they could look down on.

He was an experienced tiger who became more vicious as the years passed!

But in the end, Master Fu didn't do anything. He didn't take any revenge and didn't say anything. It was as if he had returned from a vacation and nothing had happened earlier.

Masquerade Club reopened its doors and everything went back to normal. Besides that head that belonged to Lu Qian, nothing else was shocking about the place.

Zhang Cheng and the other bosses remained fearful for several days before they realized that Master Fu really didn't intend to get back at them.

So now Master Fu of Shengcheng had returned, while a new king was rising in Donghai. But how could one state have two kings?

Donghai had killed off three dragons, while Master Fu brought Lu Qian's head back. So everyone's guess was that since they had eliminated the danger from outside the state, an internal conflict was coming up next.

Two tigers couldn't share the same territory.

Everyone was watching and waiting nervously and uneasily for a war to break out.

There were many people who even started to hesitate, and had to think carefully about whose side they wanted to stand on.

They weren't going to make the wrong decision a second time!

But the bosses turned out to be wrong again.

Masquerade Club sent out invitations. Master Fu was going to celebrate his fiftieth birthday, and everyone received an invitation.

This made everyone feel fearful. They didn't know if this was secretly a trap.

Broken Sword made a trip to Donghai himself.

Besides him, nobody else had the right to go to Donghai and give this invitation to Jiang Ning.

It was that little park again. Jiang Ning was seated on the long bench. Recently Lin Yuzhen told him to smoke less, so he didn't smoke in front of her anymore, and now he was taking a break.

"Master Fu's birthday?" Jiang Ning looked at the invitation. "That's not easy."

Broken Sword understood those three words well.

It wasn't easy for people like themselves to make it to fifty years of age. And Master Fu had lived so gloriously for so many years too.

But this could be his last year.

"Are you going?"

Broken Sword was a man of few words.

"Do you want me to go?"

"Yes."

Broken Sword looked at Jiang Ning. "But what I really want is a chance to fight it out with you!"

"Until one of us dies!"

Jiang Ning exhaled a mouthful of smoke. He laughed as he looked at Broken Sword, then shook his head.

"I hope you don't take offense, but you're really no match for me."

He looked at Broken Sword's waist. He knew that broken sword was a soft one and was hidden in Broken Sword's belt. It was sharp and killed without a trace.

Broken Sword didn't respond and didn't argue.

At their level, there was no point in arguing with words.

He had to admit that he was currently no match for Jiang Ning.

"Even if I have to die, I want to die at your hands," Broken Sword said seriously after a long while. "Other people are not worthy to kill me!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Broken Sword's tone of voice was very serious. He seldom used this tone of voice to speak.

He would only speak like this when it came to an extremely serious and grave matter.

"It's true that other people are not worthy to kill you, but you're not going to die at my hands."

Jiang Ning finished his cigarette. He folded the invitation and stuffed it into his pocket.

If it were someone else, that would be a sign of disrespect to Master Fu, and Broken Sword would have sliced his head off by now.

But that was a sign that Jiang Ning was going to attend the celebration.

"I will take my leave."

Broken Sword didn't say much. He clasped his hands politely, then turned to leave.

"If you were ten years younger, we could have a round."

Jiang Ning suddenly spoke up after Broken Sword walked about ten steps out.

Broken Sword stopped walking.

"Try to live for as long as possible."

Broken Sword nodded. He didn't say anything and vanished.

Jiang Ning watched as Broken Sword walked away. He knew that Broken Sword had already decided that he was going to die.

But before dying, Broken Sword wanted to have a match with Jiang Ning. That was probably his last wish here on earth.

But Jiang Ning wasn't going to grant him this wish.

He fished out a piece of chewing gum from his pocket and stuff it into his pocket. After chewing it for a while, he felt that it wasn't enough, so he threw in another piece. After chewing it for a while, he blew some air out onto his own palm.

"She won't smell the cigarette smoke anymore, right?"

He walked back to Lin Group's headquarters and went straight to Lin Yuzhen's office.

The moment he walked in, Lin Yuzhen looked up and her nose wrinkled. She was like a little cat trying to sniff something out.

"This Gou is terrible, he even smokes in the lift!"

Jiang Ning pretended to be all angry and said, "Now I've got this cigarette smell all over myself! If he does this again, I'll get Yuming to teach him a lesson!"

Lin Yuzhen looked suspiciously at Jiang Ning. She looked him up and down and saw that Jiang Ning looked like he was telling the truth.

She nodded, "Tell Brother Gou that smoking isn't good for health, it's better that he quits."

"Sure, I'll tell him."

Brother Gou was at the training facility in the countryside and sneezed more than ten times in a row.

Jiang Ning didn't walk near Lin Yuzhen. He just sat on the sofa and stuffed a few sugared orange slices into his mouth.

"All ready?"

"Yup. We've settled all the details of the projects and Dad has given the green light, so I just need to get the contract signed in Shengcheng."

Lin Yuzhen looked a little excited.

Lin Group was going to make its way into Shengcheng!

Lin Group's advancement over the last three months was practically a miracle.

Everything had gone on so smoothly. Even though they had run into some trouble and some problems, everything was solved.

This was good training for Lin Yuzhen. It could help to improve her capabilities at a very rapid pace.

Of course, she knew that all this was partly because Jiang Ning had been helping her all this while.

But she was still nervous about entering Shengcheng's market. She felt like everything was happening too quickly.

"Jiang Ning, do you think we're moving too quickly?"

"We're living in a fast paced world now, so everything has to move quickly."

Jiang Ning still had an orange slice in his mouth as he mumbled, "But of course, you can't move too quickly when it comes to certain things, it'll affect the interaction between husband and wife."

Lin Yuzhen took a while to realize what he meant by the interaction between husband and wife. Her face immediately turned red.

Was Jiang Ning hinting something at her?

She hadn't had any intimate interaction with Jiang Ning yet, but that...was asking too much of her.

For some reason, Lin Yuzhen suddenly thought of Jiang Ning's muscular and powerful body that she saw when they went to the hot spring resort together.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"Wifey, why is your face so red?" Jiang Ning glanced at Lin Yuzhen. "Are you feeling unwell?"

"N-n-no!" Lin Yuzhen hurriedly replied.

She breathed a sigh of relief in her heart when she saw that Jiang Ning wasn't going to walk over.

She was a little afraid of Jiang Ning coming too close to her now, because whenever he came close to her, she would feel very strange inside.

"I'm going to Shengcheng in a few days to sign the contract, do you want to go with me?" Lin Yuzhen changed the topic.

No matter what important matters she had to attend to, Jiang Ning would always accompany her, and she was very used to it already.

"Of course," replied Jiang Ning. "I'll go with you."

Lin Yuzhen felt more settled when she heard his reply.

"Thank you hubby. I'll attend to some things now, after I'm done we can go home for dinner."

Lin Yuzhen went to get busy.

Jiang Ning blew another breath at his hand and cursed in his heart, "What trashy chewing gum is this! It doesn't freshen up my breath at all, the ads were lying! You'll close down in no time!"

.....

Lin Group had grown at such a rapid pace that all the news outlets fought to report on them.

The business culture of Lin Group was also a hot topic.

Lin Group didn't seem to think that making a profit was important and it didn't have to answer to other shareholders because the only shareholders were the Lin family themselves.

As for the money that Lin Group earned, besides taking some for operation costs and staff bonuses, the large majority was donated to various charities in Donghai.

In just three months, Lin Group had donated \$600 million!

This really changed the public's opinion on corporations.

There were so many plaques and certificates on the wall in Lin Group's headquarters. Besides being tokens of appreciation from official organizations, there were also many that were sent to them from the people who had received help from Lin Group's donations.

Lin Group's reputation in Donghai was immovable now.

So many jobseekers dreamt of joining Lin Group and even treated working for Lin Group as their greatest achievement in their career.

Lin Wen and Lin Yuzhen were both very happy with what they had now.

They had even more motivation than before to make sure Lin Group did well. That way, they could help more people.

Entering Shengcheng was the first step Lin Group was taking to expand its model, and it was the most important step.

They had everything prepared. Once they made it past this step, everything else would fall into place naturally.

Lin Yuzhen was in charge of getting this contract signed.

Jiang Ning went with her, but he also arranged for Number 2, Number 6, Number 7...a total of eight men to ensure Lin Yuzhen's safety.

Jiang Ning was never careless when it came to Lin Yuzhen's safety. He would not allow any accidents to happen.

Number 2 and the rest who made it to this team had fought several rounds to get here. They were going to protect Lin Yuzhen even if they died.

Everything went through smoothly. Lin Yuzhen looked fairly excited as she quietly clenched her fists and looked like a happy little girl.

The work part of the trip was done, so Jiang Ning let the rest find a place to celebrate. They could spend as much as they liked. Everything was on Jiang Ning.

As for himself, he got Brother Gou to drive him and Lin Yuzhen to Masquerade Club to attend Master Fu's birthday dinner.

There would be plenty of chances to have celebration dinners after a job well done, but this might be Master Fu's last birthday celebration.

"What place is this?"

Lin Yuzhen looked at the stone lions outside the club and was surprised that Jiang Ning didn't let her celebrate with her staff.

"An old man is celebrating his birthday, so I've brought you here to have good food," Jiang Ning explained with a smile. "This old man is very pitiful and lonely, and hasn't celebrated many birthdays. He's already fifty, so if he doesn't celebrate his birthday now, he might not get another chance."

Lin Yuzhen had been unwilling to come along at first, but now she instantly felt bad. "Oh dear! How sad! Let's celebrate his birthday with him tonight then."



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

A lonely old man. How pitiful.

Lin Yuzhen felt bad for this old man, so after getting out of the car, she took Jiang Ning's arm and walked towards Masquerade Club.

She had never come to such a place before. Judging from its architecture and décor, it was probably a very high class place, and Lin Yuzhen started feeling a little nervous.

But with Jiang Ning by her side, she wasn't afraid of anything.

Jiang Ning reached the door and it opened. Butler Zhao immediately came walking over.

"Mr Jiang, you're here," Butler Zhao greeted him politely with a face full of smiles.

When he spotted Lin Yuzhen next to Jiang Ning, he knew who she was immediately. He was slightly surprised. Since Jiang Ning actually brought Lin Yuzhen along, he was clearly very confident in his abilities.

"Welcome, Miss Lin."

"Hello," Lin Yuzhen responded politely.

"This way please!"

Butler Zhao bowed slightly and showed them in.

Jiang Ning was the only person whom Butler Zhao would personally come out to welcome.

Similarly, nobody else besides Jiang Ning would have dared to come this late.

Zhang Cheng and the other bosses had come a long time ago.

They were all fearful but didn't dare to show it on their face. After receiving the invitation from Master Fu, many of them were hesitant because they weren't sure if this banquet was secretly a trap.

They might never come back if they attended this dinner.

But in the end, they all appeared anyway. Nobody dared to be absent.

There were seven or eight bosses sitting together and engaging in small talk.

Some of them were whispering to each other, trying to sound each other out,

hoping that someone might know what was going to happen to Shengcheng next.

Everyone else besides Zhang Cheng was well aware that they had made the wrong choice once. If they made the wrong decision again, then they were definitely going to die.

Master Fu hadn't done anything to them, but it didn't mean that Master Fu had forgotten what they had done.

It just wasn't time to settle old debts yet.

But even Zhang Cheng was feeling uneasy.

He was most afraid that Jiang Ning and Master Fu might end up fighting each other. If he was forced to choose between them, he didn't know who to choose. He couldn't afford to offend either side!

"Mr Jiang has arrived!" A voice rang out from outside.

All the bosses felt like they had been struck by lightning. They all stood up immediately.

All of them kept a serious face on and didn't even dare to breathe too loudly.

Jiang Ning walked in with Lin Yuzhen, while everyone else stood aside and watched them walk in politely.

When they reached the main area, everyone raised their voices in unison, "Greetings, Mr Jiang!"

Their voices were so well coordinated, it was as if they had practiced before this.

Jiang Ning's expression didn't change. He just waved his hand and didn't even look at them, while Lin Yuzhen got a terrible shock.

What on earth was going on?

Everyone standing seemed to be very scared of Jiang Ning.

But they didn't seem like ordinary folk from the way they dressed and carried themselves. Why were they so polite to Jiang Ning? More than polite – they were so reverent towards Jiang Ning.

Lin Yuzhen didn't know what was going on and she started looking at some of them curiously. This made everyone start noticing her.

A woman on Jiang Ning's arm...

"Greetings, Mrs Jiang!"

Someone called out loudly, and the rest all bowed reverently as they called out loudly, "Greetings, Mrs Jiang!"

Lin Yuzhen was even more taken aback.

Why...why were they so polite to her as well?!

"Hello!"

Lin Yuzhen was a polite person. Since others had greeted her, she had to greet them back too. So she nodded and smiled at them.

After that, Jiang Ning pulled her to one side. "Sit down."

Lin Yuzhen turned and whispered, "But everyone else is still standing."

"You don't have to be bothered by them," Jiang Ning glanced at the rest. "If you don't sit, none of them will dare to sit."



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Lin Yuzhen was still clueless. She wanted to ask why, but in the end she just sat down.

The moment Jiang Ning and Lin Yuzhen sat down, everyone breathed a sigh of relief and took their seats cautiously.

But nobody dared to utter a word.

They didn't even dare to breathe too loudly, never mind talk.

Zhang Cheng in particular, was very afraid. He had seen that nightmare on the highway that night!

He had no idea how many of Lu Qian's men had made it out alive that night... that was a slaughterhouse!

And the man behind it all was this seemingly harmless man who seemed to dote on his wife.

The atmosphere became very awkward since everyone remained silent. It didn't bother Jiang Ning, but Lin Yuzhen was feeling uncomfortable.

"Just talk." Jiang Ning noticed this and spoke up. "Go ahead and talk about whatever you want."

Everybody quickly started talking and they didn't even know what they were talking about. But since Jiang Ning ordered them to talk, they didn't dare to remain silent.

"They seem to be very scared of you," whispered Lin Yuzhen. "Did you bully them?"

Jiang Ning replied, "I only think about bullying you."

Lin Yuzhen blushed and didn't say anymore.

When it was about time, Butler Zhao walked in with a big smile and said, "Everyone, Master Fu has gotten changed, please move to the next hall."

Jiang Ning got up and pulled Lin Yuzhen to her feet before the rest of the people dared to stand.

Everyone walked to the next hall, and there was a huge round table. It looked fairly grand and was clearly no ordinary table.

"Mr Jiang, this way please."

Butler Zhao seated everyone accordingly. Jiang Ning was in the second best seat, followed by Lin Yuzhen. The order after that wasn't important.

Everybody knew that as long as Jiang Ning was around, nobody else was worth mentioning.

Soon enough, they could hear the sound of footsteps followed by a loud and hearty laughter.

"I'm sorry for making everyone wait so long!"

Master Fu walked in wearing a brand new tangzhuang. His face was a healthy pink and looked just like a smiling Buddha.

"Master Fu!" Everyone stood up and greeted him politely.

Lin Yuzhen wanted to stand too, but Jiang Ning didn't budge at all.

"Jiang Ning," she whispered at him, but Jiang Ning still didn't budge. He held onto her hand and whispered back, "It's alright, you don't have to be so formal around Master Fu."

This wasn't about being formal or not.

"This young lady here must be Yuzhen, right?"

Master Fu wasn't bothered by Jiang Ning's insolence at all. Even if Jiang Ning decided to lie down, he wouldn't have said anything.

"Hello Master Fu. I heard from Jiang Ning that it's your birthday today, and I came along even though I didn't prepare any present for you. Master Fu, happy birthday," Lin Yuzhen said with a smile.

She was an innocent young lady and had said all these words honestly. Master Fu had seen so much of life, and could tell that she was sincere.

"Thank you, thank you!" Master Fu felt touched inside.

He was really touched. For the past fifty years, there was only one other person besides Lin Yuzhen who sincerely wished him a happy birthday. He missed this feeling very much.

"Everyone, take a seat."

Master Fu didn't look at Jiang Ning. He sat at the main seat of the table and looked around. His gaze stopped at Lin Yuzhen briefly.

Lin Yuzhen noticed him looking at her, so she nodded slightly, and Master Fu nodded in return.

He smiled. "It is Jiang Ning's great fortune to have met a girl like you."


Master Fu was saying this purely from a man's point of view and nothing else.

She was an innocent, simple and kindhearted girl. Master Fu even felt that Jiang Ning wasn't quite worthy of her.

Lin Yuzhen felt a little shy. Was this a compliment?

"Thank you, Master Fu."

She turned to look at Jiang Ning, but he looked like he expected this, as if he was the one being complimented.

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

Jiang Ning only felt that Master Fu had good taste.

Of course Lin Yuzhen was a good girl. Jiang Ning was more aware of this than anybody else.

The dinner began.

Master Fu chatted casually with the other bosses of Shengcheng while Butler Zhao started serving the dishes.

Nobody talked about the Lu family, and nobody dared to talk about how Shengcheng was lost then restored. And absolutely nobody dared to talk about how Jiang Ning had slaughtered all the best of the Lu family and sent them right back to Linhai.

They couldn't even understand why Master Fu had invited Jiang Ning here.

Wouldn't these two tigers end up fighting if they sat next to each other?

If Jiang Ning was here to take control of Shengcheng's illegal circle, then tonight's dinner was very likely a trap!

But Jiang Ning had brought along the most important woman to him.

Zhang Cheng and the rest couldn't figure out what on earth was going on. They were all nervous, anxious, wary and uneasy.

But Jiang Ning still looked relaxed and very calm. He casually chatted with Master Fu about some things that happened in Shengcheng before, a few things about illegal circles and even talked about Master Fu's younger days.

They were like old friends reminiscing over a drink. They didn't look like enemies at all.

Even Lin Yuzhen had given a toast to Master Fu and wished him happy birthday.

The atmosphere of the dinner started to slowly relax. The bosses started to relax and started coming forward to give a toast to Master Fu and Jiang Ning.

Jiang Ning didn't drink a single drop and didn't let Lin Yuzhen drink any either. Of course, nobody dared to make Lin Yuzhen drink either. They just drank their own cup down. It was enough for them if Lin Yuzhen even lifted her glass.

After a few rounds, Master Fu's face started turning a little red.

This was the most he had drunk for the past twenty odd years.

"Zhao, bring the cake out."

They had finished drinking and eaten quite a bit. So it was time to share the birthday cake with everyone.

But when they heard Master Fu talk about taking a cake out, all the bosses started looking nervous.

Sharing the cake meant a different thing to illegal circles. That was not referring to splitting a real birthday cake up.

It referred to splitting the territory.

Was Master Fu finally going to make his move?

Everyone kept a smile on their faces, but it was hard to hide their anxiety. All of them were holding their wine glasses with trembling hands.

They didn't know if it was the alcohol, but they were all really nervous!

Jiang Ning didn't react, but Lin Yuzhen was a little curious. Why did talking about a cake make everyone so agitated? Hadn't these people eaten cake before?

That was impossible.

Butler Zhao placed the cake carefully on the table, then took a cake knife and placed it in front of Master Fu.

"I'm already fifty, and within our circle, I'm really not considered young anymore," he sighed. "When I look at all of you, I would remember my younger days. When I was your age, I was probably very much like you now. I chased after many things and I wanted many things."

Master Fu scanned the room. "Humans are all like that, right? Without any ambition, then I would have lived for nothing, no?"

Everyone nodded.

"But after I've lived for so long, I started thinking to myself. What's the most important thing in life?" Master Fu turned to look at Zhang Cheng. "Do you know what's the most important thing?"

Zhang Cheng laughed, "Money, I suppose."

Master Fu asked a few others, and they all gave different answers.

Master smiled and finally shook his head. "The most important thing is to be alive."

Everyone didn't dare to say anything. They could barely even keep a smile on their faces.

If this wasn't a trap, then what was it?

Where was Broken Sword?

They hadn't seen Broken Sword anywhere!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

A lot of them started panicking.

They watched as Master Fu picked up the cake knife and figured that none of them was going to be able to walk out of the club's door tonight. This cake was more like the last thing they would eat before they were executed.

"Jiang Ning, you can cut this cake."

Master Fu suddenly turned to Jiang Ning, who hadn't said a word yet. He smiled and held the knife out at Jiang Ning.

Everyone else in the room was stunned.

Even Lin Yuzhen was surprised.

Wasn't the host always the one who cut the cake? Why was he asking a guest to cut the cake?

She didn't ask, since all these formal occasions were always a little strange to her. The people in this room were also equally strange. Besides Jiang Ning, everything was strange.

Jiang Ning remained seated and was amused that Master Fu wanted him to cut the cake. He laughed quietly, "Aren't you afraid that I'll just carry the entire cake off with me?"

Master Fu was still smiling, but the rest of the bosses were at the edge of their seats.

It was beginning!

Were these two tigers finally going to fight?

Was Master Fu going to give up Shengcheng to Jiang Ning? Or were they going to fight it out and defend their own territory?

All the bosses were terrified.

"I'll go with whatever you decide. If you like, you can take the entire thing," replied Master Fu with a smile.

Jiang Ning got up and took the knife. He looked around and he could see that even though everyone was smiling, they couldn't hide the nervousness in their eyes.

He moved his wrists and the knife moved along with them.

"Since Master Fu wants me to split the cake, then I'm splitting it."

In no time, he had cut one slice out. Butler Zhao immediately brought a plate over. Jiang Ning put the slice of cake on the plate and held it out at one of the bosses.

"Boss Lin has been in charge of the northwestern part of Shengcheng and you do mostly cultural related businesses. The words on the cake are the most suitable for you. I hope you can continue doing well and make Master Fu happy."

Boss Lin wasn't sure what to do with this sort of treatment. Jiang Ning was seriously splitting the territory?!

And his was the first slice?

He quickly put his wine glass down and walked as quickly as possible to Jiang Ning. He used both hands to take the plate and politely said, "Thank you Mr Jiang! Thank you for your support!"

"This one has some really fresh fruit on it. Boss Guo, you're the one in charge of the farmers in the northeast part. This slice is definitely yours."

Jiang Ning sent another slice out.

Boss Guo also received it with both hands and said politely, "Thank you, Mr Jiang, for your support!"

"And this one is for..."

Jiang Ning cut six slices of the cake and gave a reason for every slice, making all the bosses admire him.

It was clear that Jiang Ning understood them well.

Zhang Cheng started getting nervous. There were only two slices of cake left. After counting everyone present, even if Jiang Ning didn't take any for himself, there were three bosses left. So at least one of them wouldn't get anything.

The other two bosses besides Zhang Cheng were also panicking.

They didn't understand what Jiang Ning meant to do. Did one out of the three of them have to die?

"These last two pieces are about the same, the two of you can take one slice each."

Jiang Ning pointed at the other two bosses. Zhang Cheng was the one without a slice.

Zhang Cheng instantly felt like he had fallen in an abyss.

That feeling of falling into the abyss made his throat feel dry.

He was doomed!

He was really doomed!

But he didn't dare to say anything. Even if Jiang Ning didn't give him anything, he wouldn't dare to say a word.

"Jiang Ning, you're short of one slice."

Lin Yuzhen noticed how awkward Zhang Cheng looked and gently prodded Jiang Ning. There was clearly one more person, so leaving him out was so embarrassing for him.

"Mrs Jiang, it's alright, I don't blame Mr Jiang. Maybe I was standing too far behind and he didn't notice me."

Zhang Cheng was grateful to Lin Yuzhen, but he continued to smile and even had to find a reason for Jiang Ning.

He really couldn't sit still now.

"Oh dear, Master Fu, I'm so sorry, my math is terrible and now I'm short of one slice," Jiang Ning smacked his forehead. "I'm so glad my wife reminded me."

"You're short of two," said Master Fu with a smile. "Don't you want one?"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Master Fu looked at Jiang Ning with a mysterious smile. The glint in his eyes was even harder to read.

"I don't want any," Jiang Ning shook his head. "I have a cake at home, and it's even more delicious than yours."

"Tell you what. The slice I owe Zhang Cheng, I'll cut one slice from the cake I have at home. He won't get to enjoy Master Fu's cake."

Jiang Ning's second statement made Zhang Cheng fly out from the abyss and into the clouds.

He almost couldn't believe his ears.

What did Jiang Ning mean by that?

Was Jiang Ning taking him in?

But when he wanted to get help from Donghai, Jiang Ning had rejected him.

He wanted to say something, but didn't know what to say. It seemed a little disrespectful to Master Fu to agree to this arrangement in front of Master Fu.

Zhang Cheng suddenly felt like he was in a difficult position. He wasn't sure if this was a good thing or a bad thing.

But from the looks of it, Jiang Ning's impression of Zhang Cheng wasn't as bad as before.

Jiang Ning didn't say anymore. He looked at Master Fu and waited for a reply.

Master Fu also remained silent for a while. They just continued looking at each other like that, and Zhang Cheng was super nervous.

"Zhang Cheng, you should thank Jiang Ning," said Master Fu after a long time.

"Thank you, Mr Jiang!"

Zhang Cheng immediately clasped his hands and lifted his wine glass. "Here's to you, Mr Jiang!"

He gulped the whole glass down and his eyes were a little red.

They had their fill of food and drinks and the cake had been split up already, so all the bosses felt settled now, with the exception of Zhang Cheng. He was still a little anxious.

Master Fu said that he was tired, so all the bosses understood what he meant. They all immediately clasped their hands to take their leave and didn't stay any longer.

"Jiang Ning, there's tea in the backyard, have some before leaving," said Master Fu.

He then turned to Lin Yuzhen and said, "Yuzhen, I didn't know both of you when you two got married. So I have a present for you to make it up to you two. Zhao, take Yuzhen to get it."

"Master Fu, I.."

Lin Yuzhen was surprised. Master Fu was giving her something?

Today was Master Fu's birthday but she hadn't brought anything along. So how could she take something from Master Fu?

"It's alright, you don't have to stand on ceremony with him," Jiang Ning nodded.

"Then...thank you, Master Fu," replied Lin Yuzhen.

"Miss Lin, this way please," Butler Zhao politely led the way.

Jiang Ning walked to the pavilion in the backyard with Master Fu. The tea set and tea leaves were all ready, and Broken Sword was pouring the hot water out.

"You're so assured around me?" Master Fu had his hands behind his back as he laughed and said, "That's the woman who's most important to you - aren't you afraid that I might harm her?"

Master Fu didn't think it was strange that Jiang Ning dared to let Lin Yuzhen move around Masquerade Club by herself.

"She's such a innocent and kindhearted girl. Even if she has nothing to do with me, would you bear to hurt her?" Jiang Ning calmly replied. "Twenty years ago you might have been able to, but I'm sure right now, you won't be able to."

He didn't say that he knew Master Fu wanted Jiang Ning to do him a favor, so there was no way Master Fu would harm Lin Yuzhen.

Master Fu laughed as he got Jiang Ning to take a seat. Broken Sword stood on one side and remained a bodyguard.

"She's a good girl, take good care of her."

"Do people become longwinded when they grow old?" Jiang Ning wasn't polite

around him at all.

Master Fu took his time to prepare the tea leaves and did not rush nor leave a single step out. To him, making tea required concentration, and had to be made with great respect for the tea.

Jiang Ning sat across from him and quietly watched him.

"Now that Lu Qian is dead, the illegal circles of Linhai will become a mess," Master Fu finally broke the silence. "The family that backed him will make their move."

"Not just me, their eyes are on you now."

The tea leaves floated in the tea cup as the fragrance filled the air. "It won't take long for someone to head southwards, and when that happens, your identity will be exposed."

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

Jiang Ning asked, "Are you giving me a reminder?"

He didn't look worried at all. There was only one person in the world who could find out who he really was. Those fellows in the north could dream on about finding out who he was.

"You don't need me to remind you," said Master Fu. "Once Linhai becomes a mess, Tianhai will also become a mess. So I'm here to ask you for a favor."

This was the main point.

This was the real reason why Master Fu had invited Jiang Ning and even took the initiative to be friendly with him.

"And why should I help you?" Jiang Ning laughed.

He wasn't the same kind as Master Fu. They hadn't known each other for a long time either.

If Master Fu had to ask someone else for a favor, it was definitely no small matter.

It was definitely something that was a matter of life and death!

"It's up to you whether you want to help me or not, but I have to ask you."

Master Fu didn't get angry and just continued making tea quietly. "I've never begged anyone before, this is the first and only time I will beg you. As for whether you can help or whether you're willing to help or not, that's up to you."

Jiang Ning didn't say anything.

Master Fu poured a cup for himself, then poured a cup for Jiang Ning.

He picked up the teacup with both hands, and the smiling and friendly look on his face was gone. It was now replaced by a stern and a somewhat resolute look.

"If possible, I would like you to protect my daughter."

Master Fu continued holding the teacup in his hand and didn't put it down. "As long as she stays alive and can live a stable and quiet life. That's good enough."

His eyes were a little red and his voice started to crack a little. He was still holding the teacup and didn't move an inch.

"I, Fu Yu, am begging you!"

This was the first time Master Fu was using his full name. The whole of Shengcheng called him Master Fu, but not a single person knew what his real name was.

Master Fu was still holding up the teacup and his eyes were slightly red. He knew that he was definitely going to die. Both the one backing Lu Qian and the one backing himself was never letting him off.

He had no other choice now. But there were some things that he had to fight for, and there was some injustices he had to fix!

Even if he had to die, he was willing.

Jiang Ning remained silent and looked at the teacup in front of him.

This wasn't a small matter.

Broken Sword stood to one side and also remained silent. He didn't help Master Fu to speak, even though he knew that as someone who was also trained in martial arts, his words would carry more weight than Master Fu's.

He wanted to help Master Fu beg Jiang Ning. He was willing to kneel in front of Jiang Ning if necessary.

But Master Fu rejected his offer.

He was going to beg Jiang Ning himself!

"Since you've already sent her into Donghai, then naturally she won't be in danger."

Jiang Ning finally picked the teacup up and used his lips to touch it gently.

Master Fu's hands trembled slightly. His voice was hoarse as he gratefully said, "Thank you!"

"After getting to this stage, do you regret it?" asked Jiang Ning.

Master Fu only laughed bitterly and shook his head. After a moment of silence, he said, "In this circle, there are many things I don't have a choice over."

The two of them remained silent and drank their tea.

"Jiang Ning!"

Lin Yuzhen came walking over and there was a look of joy on her face. She was holding a fairly old fashioned doll in her hands, and it looked like it was

something from at least ten years ago.

But she couldn't hide the happiness on her face at all.

This was the type of ragdoll that she loved the most when she was a child. She wanted to buy one, but her family didn't have enough money, and she never forgot about it. After she started earning a salary, this doll wasn't available for sale anymore.

She didn't expect Master Fu to know about this and even prepared one for her.

"Look, this is what Master Fu gave me!"

Lin Yuzhen happily said, "Thank you, Master Fu, you're really thoughtful!"

"My daughter used to like this when she was a child too. I bought two, and left one with me. It's a little old, I hope you don't mind," replied Master Fu with a smile after his emotions had gone back to how he was usually.

"Oh no, why would I? I'm only too happy!"

Lin Yuzhen was like a cheerful little elf, and couldn't stop playing with the ragdoll.

Jiang Ning didn't say anything. He just glanced at Master Fu and cursed at him. This wily old fox!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Lin Yuzhen took a seat and drank tea as she chatted with Master Fu.

Master Fu was now like an elder looking at his own daughter, his eyes filled with gentleness. There was no trace of his status as the leader of Shengcheng's illegal circle.

Lin Yuzhen didn't know who Master Fu really was either. She continued to think that he was a sad and lonely old man who seldom celebrated his birthday.

And that ragdoll that she had thought about for years helped Lin Yuzhen find a common topic with Master Fu. They started talking about Master Fu's daughter and talked about it for a while.

"She's working in Donghai now?"

Lin Yuzhen was pleasantly surprised to find out about this. "Why didn't you say so? I would like to get to know her."

"If you're destined to meet, you'll get to know her," Master Fu just laughed and didn't elaborate.

In reality, he didn't even dare to meet up with his own daughter for more than a decade now. He would only look at her from afar and protect her in secret.

His daughter probably thought her father was already dead.

It wasn't a bad thing.

"I'm getting old and longwinded. It's getting late and you two still have to return to Donghai. I won't see you two out," said Master Fu with a smile as he got up.

Jiang Ning and Lin Yuzhen stood up too.

"Master Fu, take care. Do come and visit us in Donghai when you can, Jiang Ning and I will take you out," Lin Yuzhen said with a smile.

Jiang Ning looked intensely at Master Fu but didn't say anything. He took Lin Yuzhen's hand and left.

Master Fu stood there for a long time. There seemed to be a tear in his eye. He looked upwards so that his tears wouldn't flow as he quietly murmured, "My daughter is probably as kindhearted as this girl, right?"

Broken Sword didn't respond.

Master Fu was the one who arranged for her to go to Donghai. He made his decision immediately after Explosive Dragon died.

He had to take a gamble on this. If he won, then his daughter would be able to continue living in peace. This was the only thing he could do for her as her father.

Master Fu no longer cared whether he died or not. But even if he had to die, and even if he was just a dog, since he had been pressurized and bullied so badly, he had to bite them back!

Master Fu put his emotions aside quickly and his expression slowly became grim. It was dark and murderous now.

"My old buddy, we've got to fight side by side, don't die before me."

He turned around and looked at Broken Sword.

Broken Sword didn't say anything, but his eyes said everything.

Meanwhile.

Brother Gou was waiting at the entrance of Masquerade Club.

All the bosses had walked out, and everyone's faces were glowing. Their greatest crisis had been resolved. Master Fu wasn't angry with them and let them continue controlling their part of the territory. This made them very happy indeed.

Only Zhang Cheng remained rather anxious.

"Zhang, we can't help you in this matter. If Master Fu doesn't say anything, none of us dare to say anything."

"That's right. You either have to ask Master Fu, otherwise you could ask Mr Jiang too."

"You've got to at least know which road lies ahead of you, right? Otherwise how are you going to make your choice?"

After that, everyone else left. Nobody would dare to speak up for Zhang Cheng when it came to things like this.

Zhang Cheng was really panicking inside. He wasn't sure whether Jiang Ning was really taking him in or not.

Brother Gou was standing at the door, so after thinking about it for a while, Zhang Cheng finally decided to walk over. He pulled a cigarette out and smiled politely, "Brother Gou?"

Brother Gou glanced at Zhang Cheng and frowned. "I don't smoke."

He had no idea what on earth happened, but Lin Yuzhen had actually told him to smoke less because it was bad for his health, and asked him to quit as soon as possible.

Brother Gou was so touched by her concern, but the moment his other brothers found out about this, they took turns to bash him up for more than three hours to force him to quit. They didn't want him to pollute the air around Lin Yuzhen.

Brother Gou was completely clueless. He hardly smoked, and he didn't dare to smoke in front of Lin Yuzhen either!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Brother Gou took two steps back when he saw Zhang Cheng offer him a cigarette so that he wouldn't get any ash on himself.

"I'm sorry, I'm sorry," Zhang Cheng quickly kept the cigarettes away. "Brother Gou, can I ask you a question?"

"Spit it out."

Brother Gou didn't like beating round the bush.

"Mr Jiang said that he was going to split a bit of his cake with me. What...does that mean?"

Zhang Cheng dared not be too impolite. He had witnessed how powerful Brother Gou was himself, plus Brother Gou was now closest to Jiang Ning, so it was clear that he was an important person.

"How am I supposed to know?"

Brother Gou glared at him. "Can you not ask questions that need me to use my brain?"

"....."

Zhang Cheng froze and didn't dare to ask anymore.

This temper was frightening!

Just then, Jiang Ning walked out with Lin Yuzhen. Zhang Cheng quickly stood at attention and didn't dare to look the least disrespectful.

"Big Boss, I'll open the door."

Brother Gou quickly opened the car door.

"Mr Jiang, Mrs Jiang," Zhang Cheng greeted them respectfully.

Jiang Ning didn't care about the way people greeted him, but Lin Yuzhen was amused that someone who was nearly forty was greeting her so formally.

"Get rid of everything you have in Shengcheng within two days and bring everyone to Donghai. Gou will arrange things for you."

Jiang Ning then left with Lin Yuzhen.

Zhang Cheng took a deep breath. This was the answer.

He didn't dare to hesitate, and definitely didn't dare to negotiate.

Within two days, Zhang Cheng had gotten rid of everything on his hands and didn't even care whether he profited or not. After that, he settled all the men working for him and only brought his most loyal ones to Donghai.

He contacted Brother Gou, and Brother Gou had already arranged everything for them. So he brought them to Nanpu Vegetable Market in the south of the city.

"Your job is to maintain order in this vegetable market," Brother Gou instructed seriously. "Make sure the stall owners follow the law. Their prices must be clearly stated, they must be fair and they must not cheat the customers."

"Also, you are not to hit anybody. You have to use set an example and make them respect you for it."

Zhang Cheng's lips twitched.

Jiang Ning was the one who decided that they would keep watch over this vegetable market. Perhaps he was trying to test them, so Zhang Cheng didn't dare to say anything. But if they couldn't beat anyone up and even had to set an example, then were they still considered gangsters?

Besides, they had seen how Brother Gou and the other wolves had massacred Lu Qian's men. But now Brother Gou was telling him that they had to set an example for others to respect them?

"Got it?"

Brother Gou raised an eyebrow when he saw Zhang Cheng and his men stand there in a daze.

"Yes, yes we got it."

Zhang Cheng wasn't that big boss he used to be, so he had to nod in agreement.

After Brother Gou left, they started patrolling the place to find that the vegetable market was very orderly and there was no trouble in sight.

It was a relaxing job, but it didn't seem to match the sort of people they were.

"Boss, what's going on?"

"Exactly. The places we used to take care of had thousands or even millions of dollars flowing in everyday, but this vegetable market..."

"It feels like we're just watchdogs!"

Some of his men were unhappy and indignant. They felt that Zhang Cheng had made the wrong choice by coming to Donghai.

If they stayed in Shengcheng like the rest, that would have been great. They would still be at their usual territory, doing what they were familiar with and would even be of high standing. What were they even doing now?

Zhang Cheng didn't say anything. He too, felt that Jiang Ning was purposely humiliating him.

"Boss! Bad news!"

Gao Fei's face was all pale as he scrambled over. He slipped and fell twice but didn't care about the rotten vegetable leaves on his hand. "Bad news!"

Zhang Cheng's expression instantly changed. "What happened?"

"Two highly skilled fighters from Linhai suddenly appeared and killed their way into Shengcheng, and it was a bloodbath! Out of the remaining bosses, two of them are already dead, and it's terrifying!"

BOOOOM.

Zhang Cheng felt like lightning had struck him hard on the head. He suddenly understood why Master Fu had told him to thank Jiang Ning that day.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Jiang Ning had saved his life!

He had saved all his most loyal men!

Master Fu had taken a cake out that night not to split the territory, but to choose who would stay in Shengcheng and face the terrible enemy from Linhai.

That road led to death!

Master Fu let Jiang Ning choose, and Jiang Ning chose Zhang Cheng.

Zhang Cheng felt a chill down his spine and he broke out into a cold sweat.

Those who were complaining earlier were also in shock and didn't dare to say anymore.

Gao Fei in particular, had a face so pale that it was frightening.

He had gotten news that the men from Linhai had come the night before. They were so aggressive that the bosses didn't have time to fight back, and were killed on the spot!

If they were still in Shengcheng, they were definitely dead meat by now.

The men from Linhai didn't intend to let anybody in Shengcheng's illegal circle live.

Zhang Cheng could feel his hand tremble.

He had narrowly escaped death.

"From today onwards, we're all

going to stay in Donghai. Whatever Jiang Ning tells you to do, you do it, you hear me?"

At his birthday dinner, Master Fu had asked everybody what was most important in life. Zhang Cheng and the other bosses had said money, women, status. But Master Fu said that being alive was the most important.

Indeed, being alive was the most important.

Even a wily old fox like Master Fu who had been in these circles for more than twenty years felt that being alive was the most important. How much had he gone through in order to come to this conclusion?

Zhang Cheng took a deep breath.

He knew that back then when he chose to support Donghai and support Jiang Ning, it became one of the reasons why Jiang Ning chose to save him.

Donghai was now a forbidden territory. As long as Jiang Ning was around, this was probably the safest place in the world.

He wasn't going anywhere else. He was getting on in age and would only get older. So what was more important than being alive?

None of his men dared to complain anymore.

“You guys over there! Young man! Could you help me with this basket?”

An older man looked up with a face

full of smiles as he yelled, "I can't carry it by myself!"

Zhang Cheng and the rest looked up. Without hesitation, they all ran over to help carry the basket of vegetables onto the older man's tricycle. All of them were anxious to help the older man, as if they were afraid that they were seen as unhelpful.

"Uncle, leave it there, we'll carry it! We'll carry it!"

"Take a rest! Leave such menial work to us!"

"Uncle, are you thirsty? I'll buy you a drink!"

.....

There was a whirlwind going

through Shengcheng right now.

Everyone was fearful every night.

Two highly skilled fighters from Linhai had suddenly appeared, and they had replaced Lu Qian in one day. All of Linhai's illegal circles now listened to them.

So without hesitation, they continued to kill their way into Shengcheng the next day and they were extremely aggressive.

That night, blood flowed like a river.

Two of the bosses in Shengcheng died that very night, and some of the vicious characters in Linhai's illegal circles also died that night.

This shocked a lot of people.

Master Fu didn't leave this time round. He continued to control the situation in Shengcheng and retaliated hard!

There was murder everywhere in Shengcheng right now!

Jiang Ning got the news very quickly, but this war had nothing to do with him.

He knew that Master Fu was going to fight this battle. Even if it cost him his life, he wanted to make sure the men from Linhai backed off.

An old tiger was still scary. Once he bared his teeth and showed what he was really capable of, then even other younger cats had to be wary.

Master Fu had plenty of tricks up

Chapter 267 A Whirlwind!

his sleeve and very intelligent moves. Plus he still had Broken Sword by his side.

After three nights of fighting, Shengcheng didn't lose. On the contrary, the men from Linhai's illegal circles started to lose, and Broken Sword had killed off one of the two skilled fighters that had appeared out of nowhere.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Master Fu's prowess struck fear in everyone's heart. This powerful man who had controlled Shengcheng for more than twenty years had now fully displayed how he had been able to do this.

All of Shengcheng was under attack, and this was only the beginning.

Nobody knew how long this war would last.

Donghai was safe.

Nobody was going to offend Jiang Ning at this time. That was asking to die.

"A tragedy! A terrible tragedy!"

That was Brother Gou's conclusion.

He had seen a lot of photos, and even though he had become mentally stronger as a result of Jiang Ning's training, his heart still pounded when he saw photos of what happened in Shengcheng.

The level of cruelty within the illegal circle was often higher than what most people could imagine.

"Are you scared?"

Jiang Ning turned to glance at him. "The battles you guys are going to face in the future will be a hundred times more terrifying."

"I'm not scared," replied Brother Gou seriously after taking a deep breath.

As long as they were with Jiang Ning, they feared nothing!

Even if they were faced with the most powerful enemy in the world, they wouldn't even take half a step back!

"This way of living is exciting enough, and is definitely manly enough!"

Now all of them were very determined in their hearts to always protect Donghai and they would never compromise.

"Become more powerful and you will realize what it feels like to make the entire world bow at your feet," said Jiang Ning calmly.

This calmness and incredible self confidence made Brother Gou and the rest even more motivated.

This was what it meant to be a

man.

“Big Boss, do you think Master Fu will win?”

“He’s already won,” replied Jiang Ning. “The one Master Fu is up against isn’t those two guys from Linhai.”

Those two men were merely sent by the one who backed Lu Qian to vent his frustration. Those two weren’t their best fighters either. And of course, they wouldn’t dare to send their best fighter here either.

At least not for the time being.

Master Fu wanted to kill them off and he had to pay the price for doing so. But he could afford it.

Right now, the one he needed to face was the one who was backing him!

The one who knew Master Fu's every move and was a threat to Master Fu's daughter!

If he had to be killed off by his own master and be completely wiped out, wouldn't that be so ironic?

Master Fu wasn't afraid to die, but he definitely didn't want his daughter to die because of him. But more than that, he was angry. He was angry that he had worked so hard for the one who backed him for more than twenty years, and this was how his life was going to end.

He wanted to retaliate and he wanted to take revenge!

Even if he had to die, he was going to bite a piece of meat off that man.

He was a vicious man!

But Master Fu was also a very vicious man.

“Shengcheng is not very peaceful right now. Give orders to increase Donghai’s security by one level.”

“Got it.”

Brother Gou immediately saw to it.

Broken Sword had already sent Master Fu’s daughter into Donghai. Jiang Ning already knew about it the moment she made it to Donghai, and he didn’t stop her.

Master Fu had used his life to

exchange for this favor.

So now Jiang Ning just had to quietly watch how these two old buddies, Master Fu and Broken Sword, fight back and shock the south's illegal circles.

At this moment, Master Fu was still leisurely making tea in the backyard of Masquerade Club.

The pond water was a little murky. Clearly, nobody had tended to this place recently.

Besides Butler Zhao, there was barely anybody left by Master Fu's side. They had all been given compensation money and told to leave.

"Master Fu, Zhang was assassinated, so he's dead. The

northwest area is like loose sand now," reported Butler Zhao respectfully. "Looks like the men from Linhai are trying to find their way in from the northwest area."

These few days of fighting had resulted in a great tragedy. The corpses piled up as high as a mountain! Blood flowed like a river!

Both sides had suffered casualties, but Linhai had clearly lost more, and they had lost quite a bit of clout.

Master Fu sipped his tea and there was a gleam in his eyes as he calmly replied, "Then let them come in through the northwest area. Tonight we're going to send all of them on their way."

Master Fu had said this very calmly, but Butler Zhao shuddered despite being someone who had followed Master Fu for twenty years.

Leaving the northwest unguarded was as if a martial artist suddenly had a fatal flaw.

Why would the enemy let go of such an opportunity?

The night was so dark, it made one feel frantic.

The streetlamps seemed to have been damaged by someone beforehand and the roads weren't lighted up.

There weren't many people living here in the first place, and many of them had already escaped from here. Few dared to continue staying

in this palace.

“Hurry!”

“Hurry up!”

In the darkness, there was a huge flurry of people running at high speed. All one could see at night were pairs of terrifying eyes that resembled a wild beast.

“There’s a gap in the northwest area, so we’re going to kill them!”

“Wipe them out!”

“Start from the northwest and make this gap bigger! We’ll raze Shengcheng’s illegal circle to the ground!”

A huge group of men moved aggressively forward. Their target

was the boss of the northwest part of Shengcheng, Zhang Lin!

As one of the men in charge of wiping Master Fu out, Qi Hu was also a formidable fighter. He was even more highly skilled than Lu Qian and his brothers.

But after his partner had been killed off by Broken Sword, he didn't dare to be careless anymore.

Broken Sword was even more highly skilled than he was!

He was an extremely aggressive fighter!

Broken Sword was nearly fifty, but his capabilities seemed to remain at his peak. If he were based in the north, he would have been picked up by one of the major powers.

But Broken Sword chose to follow Master Fu. He had to admit that Master Fu was very good at keeping his followers close to him.

Qi Hu's expression was grim. He just got the news that Zhang Lin had been assassinated, so he didn't hesitate any longer and brought his men to kill their way into Shengcheng once more.

This was his last chance!

If he still couldn't kill Master Fu this time, then he couldn't answer to his master.

Lu Qian had perished because of this Master Fu! That was as good as cutting off the plan that his master had set up for the past decade!

His master was furious and said he wanted Master Fu dead. He didn't care even if he offended the one who backed Master Fu.

Qi Hu had been sent with another fighter and thought that this would be a simple matter. Master Fu was just a spokesperson in Shengcheng, so he wouldn't be too formidable.

But when he watched his partner die so terribly, Qi Hu didn't dare to look down on Master Fu anymore.

"I never thought that Zhang Lin, one of Master Fu's best, would have been assassinated. Looks like there are many others who are secretly waiting to attack Master Fu!" Qi Hu laughed coldly.

Qi Hu had sent attack after attack,

but he had failed three times in a row.

This Zhang Lin was the fiercest among Master Fu's men!

He was aggressive and domineering. His men were even more vicious and fearless, so they had blocked Qi Hu's men from entering the northwest area.

If he still couldn't get through this gap today, then Qi Hu would have to kill himself as an apology to his master.

"Hurry up!" Qi Hu sent orders, "Zhang Lin is dead, so we'll start killing our way in from the northwest area and kill Master Fu!"

The streets were dark and he couldn't see anybody. Qi Hu looked

around coldly and suddenly had a strange feeling.

This street led to Zhang Lin's territory. But he suddenly felt like there was a pair of eyes staring at him from the darkness.

"Who's there?"

He spun around violently but didn't see anything.

"Did I just scare myself? Tsk, I've really underestimated this place." Qi Hu took a deep breath. "After tonight, Master Fu will no longer exist in Shengcheng."

He started running at an even faster speed.

Immediately after he left, a figure in the darkness also vanished

instantly.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Master Fu was seated on the beautiful wooden bench within Zhang Lin's main place of business. He leisurely drank his tea while waiting.

Broken Sword walked in quickly. He was faster than Qi Hu and his men.

"They're coming."

He always spoke so simply.

Master Fu nodded.

"Don't let a single one off."

Nobody would ever have guessed that Master Fu's best subordinate, Zhang Lin, was killed by Broken Sword under Master Fu's orders!

He had only one aim – he wanted Qi Hu to walk into this trap and die.

Who would have thought?

Qi Hu wouldn't have thought of this. Even Master Fu's other subordinates wouldn't have thought that Master Fu would have killed one of his own off.

They were sure that the killer must have been Qi Hu!

Everyone was furious and wanted revenge!

They were going to take revenge on Qi Hu!

"Master Fu, we're all ready!"

"We're going to fight them to the very end tonight!"

"Even if I die, I'm going to avenge Zhang Lin!"

This rage came from the other bosses. All of them were so angry now from fighting and killing over the past few days, plus they had lost so many men, so nobody was shying away from this fight.

They had no other choice but to kill off all their enemies from Linhai now.

Master Fu continued sitting where he was. He could see that long street from the main hall.

He held a cup of tea in his hands and there was no expression on his face.

Slowly, the sound of footsteps got nearer. There were many of them, and they became clearer and clearer in the night.

Master Fu's expression slowly became stern, cold and vicious!

"Attack!"

Suddenly he gave a loud shout.

The streetlamps suddenly lit up like that was its cue.

The entire street was lighted up as if it was daytime.

The lights shone brightly on Qi Hu on his men and shocked them for a second before they realized what was happening.

"It's an ambush!"

But it was already too late.

Qi Hu yelled, "Master Fu, you bloody wily old fox!"

The street wasn't very wide and it led to many smaller streets. A huge number of people came rushing out from those smaller streets and surrounded Qi Hu and his men.

“ATTACK!!”

Roars filled the sky.

Furious beams of anger were aimed at them.

Everyone blamed Qi Hu for Zhang Lin's death. They also blamed him for the deaths of their brothers.

The murderous energy filled the air, and it was like a bottle of oil hit this air and turned it into raging flames, instantly splitting Qi Hu's men into several smaller groups.

They panicked.

They were in a mess.

But Broken Sword wasn't panicky and wasn't in a mess at all.

"Attack!"

He gave the order, and it was one word as always.

All his men flowed out onto the streets like rushing water...

Their blades shone brightly and sparks flew everywhere!

Fresh blood sprayed out as broken limbs were sent flying. The screams and shouts tore through this dark night.

Swoosh...

Qi Hu could feel a cold wind on his

back. He immediately turned and swung the knife in his hand without hesitating.

CLANG!

Sparks went flying!

Broken Sword's broken sword clashed hard against that knife. Qi Hu stumbled backward and lost the force he had earlier.

"All of you...are really sly!" Qi Hu clenched his teeth and said, "But today, you're all still going to die!"

Broken Sword was like a sword himself. He was slow and steady as he stood straight and the energy of the sword shot through the sky.

He held his broken sword in hand as he flicked his wrist and the

sword resonated.

Swoosh!

He didn't even want to waste a single word.

He was just going in for the kill!

The broken sword resonated and trembled slightly for a while as if a powerful amount of force filled the blade and made it stiffer.

It gleamed cold and bright under the lights.

“DIE!”

Qi Hu yelled furiously. It was his chance to kill!

CLANG!

The knife and sword clashed again, sending sparks flying everywhere.

Broken Sword didn't say anything. He was now focusing on killing the other party.

His long sword had lost its tip, but it now looked even more frightening. Even though it was a broken sword, he could stab it through someone's heart easily.

The sound of people killing each other continued, and Broken Sword was not bothered by it at all.

He moved his long sword and became one with his sword. His speed was so fast that nobody would have thought that this was a man who was nearly fifty. They

would have thought it was an energetic youth.

CLANG!

CLANG!

CLANG!

His sword was too fast!

Qi Hu continued to block every attack, and he could feel that the area between his thumb and forefinger was beginning to hurt.

He didn't have to look to know that the skin there was beginning to tear. It had been torn by the impact of Broken Sword's attacks!

"Go to hell!" Qi Hu roared. But he didn't dare to be careless because Broken Sword was simply too

powerful.

If he didn't put in his best efforts in fighting such a highly skilled man, then he might even have the chance to give it his all.

The shadow of the sword was like a ghost as it violently continued stabbing forward. Broken Sword's expression was so cold and distant, it was terrifying.

Qi Hu blocked every attack and tried to avoid some of them, but suddenly...

Broken Sword gave a low shout. His wrist shook violently and the long sword started trembling too, then it instantly bent.

"That's...that's impossible!" Qi Hu exclaimed in surprise. He instantly

widened his eyes and clutched his neck as he took two steps backwards. His face was filled with disbelief.

This...this was impossible!

Broken Sword's sword was actually a soft sword?

Broken Sword kept his sword away and stared at Qi Hu. He finally spoke up, "You've lost."

But what he lost was his life.

Qi Hu slowly relaxed his hand and blood slowly started flowing out from the thin line on his neck.

PFFFT!

He opened his mouth and violently sprayed a mouthful of blood out,

then he crashed onto the ground.

Broken Sword didn't look at him anymore. He coughed twice and disappeared into the night.

Once Qi Hu died, the illegal circles of Linhai instantly became like loose sand because it had lost their leader, and was in a greater mess than before.

The illegal circles of Tianhai were now filled with confidence and took this chance to fight back, so all the men from Linhai left screaming...

Master Fu had won this battle.

And he had won very clearly too.

The blood on the street flowed like a river. There were broken limbs all over the place and the stench of

blood in the air made one feel like puking.

It was a tragedy!

But Master Fu wasn't bothered by any of these things.

Sending the Linhai people out was only the first step. He knew what was going to come for him, and that would be his last battle.

“Jiang Ning, I know what you're trying to do! I'm going to help you to open the way!”

Master Fu's eyes deepened. He was like a lion that had been in hiding for many years, and was baring his teeth for the last time.

It was very late at night now, but the news spread like wildfire

anyway.

All the illegal circles of the south felt like they had been hit by an earthquake.

Master Fu's prowess shocked many, but his ability to strategize made many feel even more afraid.

This was an old man?

This didn't seem like someone who was about to fall from grace.

Similarly, news reached the north too.

Such a commotion could not be kept a secret from those major powers. Especially not the two major powers that were fighting each other.

The Luo family.

This was the family that Master Fu had slaved under for the past twenty years.

Ever since Master Fu came to Shengcheng, he had earned so much money for the Luo family over the next twenty odd years.

But to the Luo family, Master Fu was merely a dog. They had kept him for more than twenty over years but he had disappointed them. He was a dog that had made them unhappy.

It was 4AM but the lights in the Luo house study was still lit.

“Is he trying to threaten me now?”

The man seated at the desk had an

authoritative face that was frightening even if he wasn't angry!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

“Broken Sword is really very powerful. The other side sent out Qi Hu and another brother but they have both died by his sword. Master Luo, should we still attack?”

“This ungrateful dog!” The authoritative man snorted coldly. “We can’t keep him around anymore.”

He knew how much Master Fu knew about the Luo family. If any of that leaked out, it would be fatal to the Luos.

This old dog had become an old fox, and was too scheming for his own good. He could handle this dog now, but once the Luo family was passed to the next generation, it might be hard to keep Master Fu under control.

“Also, check where his daughter is, we have to get rid of the source of this problem!”

This was an order.

“Yes Boss!”

He was the only person left in the study.

He remained quiet for more than ten minutes, thinking about what he should do next.

For people at his level, every step he took was extremely important. He had to consider the enemies who had declared war on him, but he also had to consider those who were waiting to ambush him in the darkness.

If he wasn't careful about these

undercurrents, he would perish for sure!

And now Master Fu had become a fuse and was a bomb that could explode anytime.

He couldn't leave this matter unresolved anymore.

"I hope you'll be smart enough to hand Shengcheng over, otherwise... don't blame me for disregarding our years of working together!"

The sun rose.

Nobody outside the illegal circles was supposed to know about what terrifying things happened in the night, but some news still leaked out anyway, so Shengcheng became very quiet.

Very few people dared to go out at night and people spent less time at the malls. The night markets were even emptier, and some didn't even dare to set up shop.

But the situation in Donghai was completely different.

This was a place where trouble wasn't allowed!

No matter how dangerous or frightening the world outside was, it was safe within Donghai.

Many people started entering Donghai and there were suddenly more people in Donghai.

Zhang Cheng and his men were now in charge of maintaining order within Nanpu Vegetable Market.

They had heard all about the commotion in Shengcheng's illegal circle over the past few days. There were many who disappeared completely every night.

It was really a beautiful thing to be alive.

"Boss, Master Fu has won," whispered one of his men who had finished settling something at one of the stalls and walked over to where Zhang Cheng was.

"Shengcheng should be able to settle down now, right?"

Zhang Cheng didn't respond.

"The guys from Linhai have suffered tremendous losses and have returned to Linhai. So can we go back?"

Zhang Cheng looked at him. "You want to go back?"

His subordinate nodded.

"Then you can go back," Zhang Cheng spoke very calmly.

"I can't go back anymore."

He didn't say anymore and continued with his work.

His subordinate was surprised and wanted to say more, but Gao Fei stopped him.

"We can't go back anymore. I tell you, whatever happened in Shengcheng is only the beginning and hasn't ended. If you go back now, you're definitely going to die." He didn't mince his words and had a stern expression on his face. "The

safest place is right here. Boss won't repeat these words, so it's up to you whether you want to believe it or not."

Gao Fei was right. The safest place right now was Donghai.

Anywhere with Jiang Ning around was the safest.

Jiang Ning was now enjoying the warmth of his bed. Lin Yuzhen's fragrance continued to linger on the blanket.

"Jiang Ning! Time to get up and eat breakfast!"

That was Lin Yuzhen calling him from outside.

She was too shy to call him Hubby at home. He didn't know what she

was shy about.

Beep beep.

A message came in on his phone.

Jiang Ning took a look and had a meaningful smile on his face.

“The new spokesperson is here already?”



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

There was finally some movement from the north.

If there was still no movement by this time, Jiang Ning was going to scold Fei silly.

He had actually taken three months to do such a small thing. He wasn't as good as before huh.

Jiang Ning put his phone away and got up to get changed.

A new spokesperson, eh?

It sounded like fun times were coming. Jiang Ning hoped this new spokesperson wouldn't let him down.

He walked out of the bedroom and noticed that there were several small dishes on the table already.

They looked pretty decent. Lin Yuzhen had really put in effort into these.

“Smells good,” Jiang Ning sniffed.
“You’ve improved.”

Lin Yuzhen was in the kitchen when she heard Jiang Ning compliment her. There was a smug look on her face as she scoffed, “Enough of your nonsense and go wash up. Send me to work later.”

Jiang Ning nodded and smiled as he walked towards the bathroom.

Lin Wen and Su Mei had gotten up a long time ago, but since Lin Yuzhen could prepare breakfast, they left it all to her.

Su Mei had always regretted not teaching Lin Yuzhen how to cook,

but clearly it wasn't too late.

When she saw how Jiang Ning and Lin Yuzhen seemed to be getting along better and better, Su Mei was happy, but she was also a bit worried.

She was worried that since they were from two very different worlds, the immense difference would eventually disappoint or even upset Lin Yuzhen.

But so far they seemed to be moving in a better direction.

She had gone through these things before and knew that it was useless to say anything. She could only let nature take its course.

"Come and eat," Su Mei called out to Jiang Ning when she saw him

emerge from the bathroom.

Jiang Ning walked past her and Su Mei's eyes instantly narrowed. Her mouth was slightly open and she nearly screamed.

She couldn't hold it in and ran to her own room. Lin Wen had just changed and was walking out, so she crashed straight into him.

"Oh gosh, what's going on?"

Lin Wen held onto Su Mei, who nearly fell. But Su Mei wasn't bothered by this.

She dragged Lin Wen back into the room and closed the door behind her. She looked all secretive as she whispered, "Guess what I just saw?"

Lin Wen was stunned.

The house only had four of them and some old things lying around. What could Su Mei have seen?

“What did you see?” asked Lin Wen curiously.

“Hair!” Su Mei’s expression was very serious.

Lin Wen froze for a while then burst out laughing.

“I was wondering what you were talking about. I see it too,” Lin Wen reached a hand out to gently caress the hair behind Su Mei’s ear and continued, “I see a whole head of mesmerizing smooth hair.”

“ARGH! Stop it!”

Su Mei's face reddened. They were already so old, why was he still saying mushy things like a young person! "I'm serious! I saw Yuzhen's hair!"

She was afraid Lin Wen might skew the topic again, so she started whispering as if she had discovered some important secret.

"On Jiang Ning's shoulder! That was Yuzhen's hair!"

If that long strand of hair wasn't Yuzhen's, whose was it?

Jiang Ning and Lin Yuzhen shared the room, but Su Mei knew that one was sleeping on the bed while the other slept on the floor. Lin Yuzhen even had a pair of scissors under her pillow before!

But now Lin Yuzhen's hair appeared on Jiang Ning's shoulder. Did that mean that the two of them...were sleeping together now?

Lin Wen went into a daze for three seconds as if he was frozen.

Before Su Mei said anything else, he burst out laughing even harder than before and said, "That's a good thing!"

"Good my foot!"

Su Mei pinched Lin Wen's waist hard. "You don't know what the situation really is and you say it's a good thing? Do you think Yuzhen has been taken advantage of?"

"I say, why are you always so worried? On one hand you're worried that Yuzhen doesn't like

Jiang Ning, then on the other hand you're also worried that Yuzhen likes Jiang Ning." Lin Wen didn't know what else to say. "This is between the two young ones, so let these young people worry about it. Besides, have you ever seen Jiang Ning bully Yuzhen?"

"No."

"Have you ever seen a man do so many things for a woman?"

"No."

"Then have you seen a woman want to give herself to a man she doesn't love?"

Su Mei paused for a while, then shook her head. "No."

"I told you long ago that Jiang Ning

won't bully Yuzhen. I trust him.”

“Men are a good judge of other men.”



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Lin Wen laughed. "Alright now, don't worry anymore. I'll have a good chat with Jiang Ning one of these days."

Su Mei nodded.

She was confused about her own attitude now.

Jiang Ning was a good boy, so even if he wasn't her son-in-law, she wanted him to become her godson.

But then when she thought about how outstanding Jiang Ning was, she was afraid that her precious daughter might be hurt.

It was so hard to be a mother.

After breakfast, Jiang Ning sent Lin Yuzhen to the office.

“Mum seems to know,” said Lin Yuzhen quietly as she looked out of the car window.

“Know what?”

“Know that we’re...sleeping together.”

Her face turned slightly red.

They were literally sleeping on the same bed and nothing else happened. But somehow it sounded strange when she said it this way.

“Why, Mum wants a grandchild already?” Jiang Ning turned to look at her, “You can’t hurry this. You have to go along with nature and count the days carefully.”

“Jiang Ning!” Lin Yuzhen exclaimed

and bit her lip. “Stop it!”

“You...you’re not allowed to touch me yet!”

Jiang Ning purposely put on a serious face. “Then when?”

Lin Yuzhen didn’t say anything.

When?

She seemed to be mentally prepared for this to happen, but even though they had been sharing the bed for a while now, Jiang Ning never did anything more than just sleep.

Some people said that men who crossed the line were animals. So Jiang Ning was worse than an animal?

“Yuzhen.”

“Hmm?”

“I want to have you.”

Jiang Ning was very serious when he said this.

Lin Yuzhen instantly turned all red. She felt like her face was all hot and she didn't dare to look at Jiang Ning. She couldn't believe that this guy had said something like that so directly!

“How...how could you say it so directly?!”

“Oh, okay I'll be a bit more indirect,” Jiang Ning kept a serious face on. “Yuzhen, can I have you?”

Lin Yuzhen didn't respond. She

stomped her feet and turned away so that Jiang Ning could only see the side of her face.

But even her side profile was beautiful.

Jiang Ning was very amused. This wife of his was so innocent and adorable. He liked her so much.

He had just teased her with two sentences and her face was this red.

He saw Lin Yuzhen's long eyelashes flutter and flutter, as if she was going through a difficult mental battle.

He couldn't believe how adorable this girl was.

The two of them didn't speak

anymore. Once they reached the office, Lin Yuzhen hopped out of the car.

“When I’m ready, I’ll tell you.”

Lin Yuzhen then hopped into the elevator.

Jiang Ning froze for a while, then started laughing. So Lin Yuzhen had been considering this question the whole way here?

He suddenly started having feelings of anticipation.

Meanwhile, the new spokesperson had arrived in Shengcheng.

The man who came looked very ordinary and nobody would notice him in a crowd. He came all by himself and walked straight into

Masquerade Club.

Of course, Master Fu knew that this day would come. But he was surprised at the way it happened.

“The master isn’t angry. He’s just a little disappointed.”

A middle aged man sat opposite Master Fu. He wasn’t large in stature, but was fairly muscular.

He calmly drank the tea. He couldn’t sense Broken Sword’s presence, and he didn’t seem afraid anyway.

“You’ve put in a lot of effort over the past years, so the master says he won’t fight with you over this matter and you can retire...”

“Even if he doesn’t want to fight

with me over this, I want to fight with him!” Master Fu cut him off with a cold smile before he could finish his sentence.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Master Fu didn't mince his words and looked coldly at Ye Xinhuo. He continued in a dark voice, "I've done so much for the Luo family, and look what he's done to me!"

"Master Fu, you're not a rash person."

Ye Xinhuo's emotions didn't change at all. He looked steadily at Master Fu, "After that incident twenty years ago, you know the consequences of being rash."

Master Fu smiled coldly. He looked at the teacup on the table. He picked it up gently and poured the tea onto the ground.

Of course he remembered what happened twenty years ago.

He would never forget it.

He had chosen to be a dog for the Luo family, to earn huge amounts of money for them in Tianhai. This was his choice, but it was a choice he had to make.

And now?

The Luo family had never held up their side of the deal!

“This cup is for the master.”

Master Fu poured the tea out onto the ground, like how one would give a toast to the dead.

Ye Xinhuo frowned.

Master Fu was being very disrespectful now!

“From today onwards, the Luo family and I will have nothing to do

with one another,” said Master Fu. “We owe one another nothing, so I’m not handing Shengcheng over.”

Ye Xinhuo frowned even harder.

He put the teacup down hard as he glared at Master Fu. His voice had become much colder now.

“Have you thought about it carefully?”

Murder flashed in Ye Xinhuo’s eyes.

“Did you really think a broken sword would be able to save your life?”

He had orders from the top. If Master Fu complied, then things were less complicated. But either way, he had to kill Master Fu.

He knew this, and Master Fu knew

this better than he did.

Master Fu suddenly burst out laughing.

“Broken Sword is not in Shengcheng.”

He said very directly, “If you want to kill me, go ahead. But I’m not going to hand Shengcheng over. If the Luo family wants it, they can fight for it themselves from scratch!”

This was a higher price to pay than usual.

Master Fu was really vicious.

Ye Xinhuo’s eyes narrowed. Broken Sword wasn’t in Shengcheng?

Then where was he?

The only one he needed to be careful of was Broken Sword. This legendary swordsman who was nearly fifty only had a broken sword in his hands, but he was still an extremely highly skilled martial artist!

“I’ve already arranged everything with those ledger books. Once I die, those things will surface. The Luo family has earned so much over the years, so isn’t it high time they gave some of it back?”

Master Fu laughed even harder.

“You’re asking to die!”

“I am someone who deserves to die in the first place.”

Master Fu agreed with him.

“Someone like me would never

meet with a good end in the first place. But the Luo family...will also pay the price for this!”

As he spoke, blackish blood started to flow out from Master Fu's nostrils.

Ye Xinhuo got a fright and sprang up from his chair as he watched Master Fu warily.

“You put poison in this tea?”

Ye Xinhuo's face paled a little. He was prepared for this, so he didn't really drink any.

Even though it was from the same pot of tea as Master Fu, he was still on high alert.

Ye Xinhuo never thought that Master Fu would use his own life to

try to kill him.

More and more blood flowed out from Master Fu's nostrils, and there was blood coming out from his mouth as well.

He coughed violently and sprayed a mouthful of blood out. But he continued to sit up straight like an old pine tree that refused to give in to age.

"What a pity, I didn't manage to kill you."

The smile on Master Fu's face became more and more chilling. "Ye Xinhuo, back then, my wife died at your hands...looks like I can't take this revenge."

"Where is Broken Sword?!" Ye Xinhuo roared angrily.

He was now most worried about Broken Sword.

If this frightening swordsman was hiding somewhere in the shadows, then it would mean trouble.

“He...he’s gone up north.”

There was a sly and malicious look on Master Fu’s lips. Then he suddenly stopped breathing and sat there like a statue, never to move again.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Ye Xinhuo was alarmed!

He had come to Shengcheng, so there weren't a lot of people left to protect the master in the north.

Broken Sword was going up north to kill the master!

Damn it!

Ye Xinhuo cursed at Master Fu for being a wily old fox. Master Fu had figured that Ye Xinhuo would come to Shengcheng, so he got Broken Sword to go up north while Master Fu continued to remain in Shengcheng.

What a vicious plan!

What a vicious plan it was!

Ye Xinhuo didn't dare to stay here

any longer and left immediately.

Nothing was more important than the safety of the master.

He quickly informed the north, but three people in the Luo family had already been killed!

In one night!

If the master hadn't been lucky, he would have perished too.

Ye Xinhuo was furious. "Broken Sword, you're asking for it!"

He returned to the north as quickly as he could, swearing to kill Broken Sword himself.

Masquerade Club became completely silent as Shengcheng fell into a very strange situation.

News of Master Fu's death had gone out, but nobody dared to do anything.

Whoever tried anything was definitely dead meat.

The north started shaking up!

Even Jiang Ning didn't expect Master Fu to do this.

He had used himself as bait. Killing off Ye Xinhuo was the most ideal situation, but even if he didn't manage to kill Ye Xinhuo, getting him out of the Luo house gave Broken Sword the chance to kill off the head of the Luo household.

"He had calculated correctly that the Luo family would send their best fighter to force him out."

The only one who could deal with Broken Sword and Master Fu was Ye Xinhuo.

So naturally the Luo family would have sent him over. But they didn't expect Master Fu to be fully prepared for this and was even willing to die. And even though he was going to die, he was determined to bite something off the Luo family.

"There's quite a lot of commotion in the north."

That was information from Fei.

Even Jiang Ning was a little shocked.

He wasn't just shocked by what Master Fu had done, but even more shocked by Broken Sword's ability.

Within just one day, six members of the Luo family had died.

Three of them were important people in the Luo family. They had all been slaughtered by Broken Sword.

He was taking revenge for Master Fu.

The air was getting tense. Many people were already wary of the powers in the north. Now that a highly skilled martial artist had snapped and was bent on killing a particular person, nobody could stop him.

Even within the north, this was no different.

The Luo family was now faced with a huge enemy!

Jiang Ning got another piece of news.

Ye Xinhuo had rushed back to the Luo house, fought with Broken Sword and injured him, but Broken Sword managed to escape.

Broken Sword had tried to kill the second son of the Luo family so as to further agitate the master of the house.

Nobody knew where Broken Sword was now. The Luo family guarded themselves fiercely by getting a large number of highly skilled fighters to protect the family and limiting the movement of the Luo family members.

After three days, nothing happened, and some people suspected that Broken Sword had already died.

Chapter 276 Run!

After all, Ye Xinhuo was the best the Luo family had, and he was even more impressive than Broken Sword.

But after another two days, there was news that family members who lived outside the north had been killed!

Broken Sword had left the north and was now killing off the ones who had been sent to other cities.

He was really crazy!

Jiang Ning sat where he was without saying anything for a long time. He knew that Broken Sword was definitely going to die, but before dying, he wanted to help Master Fu kill as many people as he could. He wanted to take revenge for his old buddy, to get the

justice he deserved.

“Big Boss, Broken Sword killed another three more, but apparently he was surrounded and is severely injured, and it took him a lot to finally escape...”

Brother Gou said these words with great respect.

Broken Sword could have just not done anything. Master Fu had already died and he had killed off several important family members, so that was enough to avenge Master Fu. But Broken Sword continued to use his life to keep killing.

This sort of loyalty made everyone else in the same circle feel deeply for him.

Jiang Ning didn't say anything.

Broken Sword was a real martial artist, and so loyalty to his buddies was more important than his own life.

"Master Fu, you won't be lonely on the other side since you have such a buddy," said Jiang Ning to himself.

After a few moments, he turned to Brother Gou. "Someone will come knocking on our door soon, tell the brothers to get ready."

There was a gleam in Brother Gou's eyes. "Got it!"

The entire nation was looking out for Broken Sword.

Broken Sword was now a wanted man, so both the legal circles and illegal circles were trying to hunt Broken Sword down. The Luo family had used all the influence they had, and even Ye Xinhuo himself was on the hunt to kill Broken Sword.

All the Luo family members had been called back to live in the north and were not to leave the house.

Since when did the Luo family have to live in such a pitiful manner?

A martial artist who was approaching fifty actually managed to kill enough of them to make the family hide at home. They were now the laughingstock of the north.

But similarly, the other powers of the north witnessed for themselves that having power and influence wasn't enough. They needed a fierce martial artist too.

After all, the amount of damage that a truly highly skilled martial artist could do was simply shocking.

Back at the Luo house.

BAM!

The head of the Luo house, Luo Yongqian violently kicked the blanket to the floor and roared angrily, "You couldn't kill off just one Broken Sword?! Useless trash!"

"All of you are useless pieces of trash!"

"He's killed twelve of my family members! TWELVE!"

"He's just one man, can't you do anything about him at all?"

He was furious and glared angrily at Ye Xinhua, "And do you have anything to say?!"

Ye Xinhua bowed slightly. He had a grim expression on his face too.

He had fought with Broken Sword twice now, but he had escaped both times.

He had never worried about fighting with Broken Sword, but Broken Sword's understanding of swordsmanship had increased with his age, so he was much more powerful than he was ten years ago.

Luo Yongqian was furious. Everyone standing in front of him didn't dare to say anything.

How could he not be angry? His family had been pushed into a corner like this!

His family was one of the major families in the north after all. Even though his family wasn't at the uppermost tier, his family was still considered up and coming. And now?

Now everyone was laughing at him!

He had kept a dog but this dog came back to bite him, and bit him so hard! He had been thoroughly embarrassed.

"If he appears again, I'll definitely be able to kill him off," said Ye Xinhua as he suppressed his fury.

"Broken Sword was severely injured the last round. Have you found where he's hiding yet?"

Luo Yongqian suppressed his anger, and his thick eyebrows were icy cold. "He's so sly, do you think he'd appear easily now?"

Broken Sword was still alive and hiding somewhere in the shadows. So he was like a sword that could slash their necks anytime!

Did his family have to keep hiding in the house like a frightened tortoise?

He was so repressed!

He had never felt so repressed before!

"We just have to lure him out!" Ye Xinhua's voice turned dark. "If I don't kill him, I will kill myself in apology!"

Everyone around him started to tremble. They didn't expect Ye Xinhua to say something so harsh.

Luo Yongqian held his anger in as he looked intensely at Ye Xinhua. After a few moments of silence, he said, "Fine! Lure him out! I'll be the bait!"

Nobody else was more suitable as bait than him.

The one that Broken Sword wanted to kill most was Luo Yongqian. He wanted to take revenge for his old buddy, Master Fu.

"Master, don't do it!"

"It's too dangerous!"

"Master..."

Everyone started shouting in protest.

It was too risky to let Luo Yongqian be the bait. If Broken Sword really went crazy and either killed or severely injured Luo Yongqian, the family would really be in danger.

"Shut up, all of you!" Luo Yongqian roared angrily and everyone instantly shut their mouths. He stared straight at Ye Xinhua, "My life is in your hands!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

News of Luo Yongqian leaving the house spread quickly. He was going to attend a networking seminar.

His itinerary was kept strictly confidential.

Nobody expected Luo Yongqian to still have the guts to come out at a time like this. This was as good as sending his head on a platter to Broken Sword.

There were some who had guessed that the Luo family had done something so illogical so as to lure Broken Sword out and kill him once and for all.

After all, Broken Sword was definitely going to appear since this was such a rare opportunity.

Even if he might die, Broken Sword would definitely appear.

Everyone had seen how crazy Broken Sword was. He didn't fear dying at all.

When the day came, a group of cars left together and drove on the road. Ye Xinhuo sat right next to Luo Yongqian. They both had equally stern expressions on their faces and didn't dare to let their guard down at all.

There were cars guarding him on both sides. Five cars and more than thirty bodyguards surrounded Luo Yongqian's car to make sure he was well protected.

Nothing happened on his way there.

It was as if Broken Sword knew he didn't stand a chance and chose not to appear.

But people like Jiang Ning knew that Broken Sword would definitely appear.

The cars had reached the venue. Both sides of the road had been cleared. Luo Yongqian remained seated in the car and didn't get out. Ye Xinhuo got out first, looked around, then nodded. The bodyguards formed a circle and protected Luo Yongqian in the middle.

"Looks like he doesn't dare to come out," scoffed Luo Yongqian coldly.

Of course, he was really nervous too. How could one not be nervous in the face of death?

He was about to walk towards the venue when the bodyguard right in front of him suddenly turned around.

Luo Yongqian got a terrible shock when he saw that face.

That face looked fairly young, but he recognized those eyes. It was Broken Sword!

Before he could react, Broken Sword made his move!

He had disguised himself and waited for the past three days. Today was his best chance!

Broken Sword flicked his wrist and his broken sword sprang out from his belt and went towards Luo Yongqian. The two bodyguards next to him reacted quickly and tried to block Broken Sword, but he chopped their heads off immediately.

Blood flew everywhere.

Luo Yongqian shouted in fright as the blood spurted on his face and he felt like his heart was going to leap out of his mouth.

"Xinhuo! Xinhuo!" he yelled loudly.

He quickly took several steps back.

All the bodyguards rushed to the front fearlessly and protected Luo Yongqian behind them.

"Attack!"

Broken Sword was like a demon. He held his broken sword in hand and killed one person with one slash.

There was blood everywhere and screams filled the air.

In just a few seconds, six bodyguards had died at Broken Sword's hands.

He was too fast!

He was a demon!

Broken Sword stared straight at Luo Yongqian, as if he could only see Luo Yongqian. If he didn't kill Luo Yongqian, he couldn't help his old buddy take revenge.

CLANG!

Suddenly a figure leapt out and his dagger met with Broken Sword's blade with a loud clang and sent sparks flying.

"Broken Sword!" Ye Xinhuo roared angrily as murder filled the air. "Today, you must die!"

Broken Sword didn't say anything. He flicked his wrist and the broken sword resonated. He ignored Ye Xinhuo and made another stab at Luo Yongqian.

PFFT!

Ye Xinhuo didn't block the attack in time, so Broken Sword had slashed Luo Yongqian's shoulder, revealing his bone.

"You're asking for it!" Ye Xinhuo was really furious now.

The fact that Broken Sword had actually managed to injure Luo Yongqian in front of him was a great insult.

He made a move and used everything he had to fend off Broken Sword so that he didn't get another chance to attack.

Luo Yongqian kept moving backwards and howled as he clutched his injured arm, shouting, "Kill him! Kill him!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

BAM!

Ye Xinhua and Broken Sword engaged in a violent battle instantly.

Nobody around them was able to interfere.

There was no need to sound each other out. The two of them immediately began their attack.

Broken Sword was bent on killing Luo Yongqian, so his eyes were icy cold. They were so cold that they struck fear into others' hearts.

That was a gaze that disregarded everything in the world, including his own life!

BAM!

BAM!

BAM!

Ye Xinhua had a chance to kill Broken Sword, so he attacked as fiercely as he could.

If he still couldn't kill Broken Sword today, he might as well kill himself.

Broken Sword was already severely injured, so after fighting Ye Xinhua head on, his face began to pale.

BOOOOM!

Broken Sword took two steps back. There was blood spilling out from his mouth, but his gaze never changed.

"Go to hell!"

Ye Xinhua didn't care. Every move he made was vicious and fatal.

He was going to kill Broken Sword, even if he became severely injured, or even if he died.

Broken Sword also wanted to kill Luo Yongqian off. But he knew that he might not be able to today.

But so what?

"Attack!" Broken Sword roared and it was as if there were two beams shooting

out from his eyes, as if he had returned to the time when he was younger. He swung his broken sword and the wind howled.

The energy of his sword filled the air and cut through everything!

Even Ye Xinhuo didn't expect Broken Sword to be able to wield such power even though he was on the verge of death.

"Move back! Hurry!"

"Protect the master!"

"Hurry and protect the master!"

The remaining bodyguards protected Luo Yongqian with all their might and another five or six of them perished like that.

Luo Yongqian's face was completely pale.

The others immediately moved aside. The blood on the ground was flowing like a river, and there were broken limbs everywhere. There was even a head rolling, and someone couldn't help but start retching.

It was so terrifying!

BAM!

Suddenly Ye Xinhuo slammed a palm hard on Broken Sword and sent him flying out.

Broken Sword rolled on the ground twice and managed to kneel on one knee as both his legs trembled.

He was still holding onto his sword.

His eyes were still so cold. Even though he was covered in injuries, even though his face was dripping with blood, and even though he would immediately puke blood the minute he opened his mouth.

"Die.."

Broken Sword gave a low shout and made an attack again.

But he had run out of energy. His injuries hadn't had time to recover, and Ye Xinhuo cut even more deeply into them.

Blood dyed Broken Sword's long robe red. He collapsed onto the ground and

couldn't move anymore.

But he was still holding his broken sword tightly.

POOOOFFFT!

Ye Xinhuo took a step forward. He stabbed his dagger into Broken Sword's heart, and even his lips were twitching.

The air was suddenly frozen.

Nobody dared to say anything, and nobody even dared to react.

It was like the scene had frozen in time.

Even Ye Xinhuo was still panting. He had many wounds on his body, and he had a ragged expression on his face.

He knew that if Broken Sword chose not to attack today and waited till he had recovered from his injuries, then the Luo family really didn't stand a chance against Broken Sword.

Broken Sword was dead.

He was on the ground, but his darkened eyes were still staring at Luo Yongqian, and the broken sword in his hand was still pointing at Luo Yongqian.

"Drag him away! Drag him away!" yelled Luo Yongqian loudly. "Chop him to pieces and feed him to the dogs!"

His entire body was trembling.

He nearly died!

This Broken Sword was really too terrifying.

Even though Broken Sword and Master Fu were dead, the Luo family had still suffered tremendous losses. Many things about them had been exposed and they were under tremendous pressure now.

Luo Yongqian was very frustrated by this.

Soon enough, the few bodyguards left took Broken Sword's body away and went to find a place to dump it.

They were going to chop him up and feed the dogs, as per Luo Yongqian's instructions.

But when the car reached the outskirts of the city, it suddenly stopped.

"Who the hell are you?"

The people in the car immediately hopped out. They didn't expect anyone to block their way.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

They didn't want to hand Broken Sword's body to anyone in the legal circles or to anyone else at all. The Luo family wanted to destroy this body to vent their anger, so they had to get it done.

"I'm taking this body away with me, you think of how to explain yourselves."

The person standing there spoke calmly. He didn't say anymore and just took out a tag from his pocket.

"These are instructions from my Big Boss, so if you block my way, don't blame me for getting nasty."

He had said this very casually, but the bodyguards froze on the spot and couldn't move!

News of Broken Sword's death spread very quickly.

To many people, it was a good thing that this psychotic serial killer was dead.

But to many of the powerful families, this was a reminder to make sure they had to be more careful and smarter than before.

Who knew who would be the next one to bite the hand that feeds them?

The Luo family had really suffered this time. The price they had paid was extremely high.

This news quickly reached Donghai, and reached Jiang Ning's ears.

He had predicted this result a long time ago.

"Sure, bury him well."

Jiang Ning hung up the phone and didn't say anything.

That was the most he could do for this loyal martial arts senior.

He knew that if Broken Sword had remained in hiding and targeted only the Luo family secretly, then the Luo family was going to live in darkness for the next ten years.

But Broken Sword was not such a person. He was a sword himself. A very straight sword!

He would only use his own way of taking revenge, even if it meant that he would die in the process.

Jiang Ning had insisted on taking his body back in one piece only because this sort of loyalty and unconcealed way of living was hard to find.

"The Luo family...is a breach of the north."

He sat on the sofa and narrowed his eyes. "Master Fu, Master Fu, you used your life to open up this gap for me, just because I would protect your daughter?"

Jiang Ning knew who Master Fu's daughter was, but he didn't do anything.

He knew Master Fu didn't want his daughter to know about any of this. His dying wish was for his daughter to live like an ordinary person with no hatred, and to live a safe and peaceful life.

Jiang Ning could do that for him.

"Director Xin," Jiang Ning called the head of HR. "Jiang Ning here. About that girl, Chen Yu, who applied for a job here? Both Yuzhen and I think she's not bad, arrange a job for her."

Jiang Ning hung up the phone and stood up.

He walked to the French window and looked down at Donghai city.

This city of iron, this forbidden territory would see storms rise again. But so what?

"Luo Yongqian, I'm waiting for you in Donghai."

Meanwhile.

Back at the Luo house.

Luo Yongqian was still scowling. Broken Sword was dead and his body had been chopped up to feed the dogs, but his anger was still not appeased.

It wasn't just because many of his family members had died. It was more because Master Fu had exposed some things about his family, so it had become a weakness to his family and they had lost their say in many things.

On top of that, they had lost the illegal circle of Shengcheng, so he had a lot less revenue now.

He really hated Master Fu and Broken Sword to the core, and wished he could dig them out from the grave and whip their corpses.

"I hear that Fu Yu still has a daughter?" There was an evil gleam in Luo Yongqian's eyes. "I've lost nearly twenty family members and his daughter still dares to live on?"

Ye Xinhuo stood there and didn't say anything.

He was covered in wounds from fighting Broken Sword. There was no way he could have come out unscathed despite being highly skilled since he was fighting with a man who was prepared to die.

The Luo family had indeed lost too much this time round.

Both Master Fu and Broken Sword had bitten a good piece of meat off the Luo family, and had delivered a tight slap to their face!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

But how could Luo Yongqian take this lying down?

Ye Xinhuo could tell that Luo Yongqian wanted to find Master Fu's daughter and kill her off, but he didn't think that was necessary.

Master Fu and Broken Sword were both dead, so that should be the end of things. If he blew the matter up, Ye Xinhuo was afraid that they were creating extra problems for themselves and end up suffering losses.

But Luo Yongqian was the head of the family, so Ye Xinhuo had to listen to whatever he said.

"Let Ye Kuang handle this matter. Rest well and recover from your injuries as soon as possible."

Luo Yongqian looked at Ye Xinhuo.

If Ye Xinhuo wasn't around, his family would have suffered even greater losses.

"Thank you, Master Luo," said Ye Xinhuo as he clasped his hands. "Ye Kuang can handle this sort of matter."

Ye Xinhuo was proud of this disciple. Ye Kuang was only thirty years old, but he had become a highly skilled fighter among his generation, and wasn't too far off from Lu Qian.

Asking him to settle Master Fu's daughter was too simple a task for him.

But if he could accomplish a task for Luo Yongqian, then that wasn't a bad thing.

"Also," Luo Yongqian changed his sitting position because his wound was so painful it made him frown a little. "The illegal circle of Shengcheng is now like loose sand because they don't have a leader. A few of our old enemies are watching it carefully."

That place used to belong to the Luo family!

There was no way he was going to let anyone else snatch it away.

"Once you've recovered, pay Shengcheng a visit. I'm going to take back what belongs to the Luo family!"

The Luo family had lost quite a fair bit this time, and Luo Yongqian had spent a huge amount of resources to seal the mouths of certain people. The price he paid couldn't be fully compensated with cash.

"Got it."

Ye Xinhuo didn't say anymore and went out.

He went back to his place, and Ye Kuang was already waiting for him.

He had guessed that Master Luo would have a task for him. Given Luo Yongqian's personality, he definitely wanted to weed out all possibilities.

"Master."

Ye Kuang was thirty years old, tall in stature and imposing. He was a notoriously ferocious character in the north and nobody dared to offend him. Furthermore, his master was Ye Xinhuo.

"Master Luo has a task for you, and I suppose you already know what it is, right?"

Ye Xinhuo was very pleased with this particular disciple of his. He had taken him in as a young child and trained him like his very own son.

"Kill Fu Yu's illegitimate daughter!" Ye Kuang laughed coldly. "Fu Yu thought that he had a seamless plan, but I still managed to track her down."

Ye Xinhuo nodded and didn't ask for more details.

"Be careful, it's very messy in Tianhai now, so don't be careless."

"Don't worry, Master. I know what to do."

That was what Ye Kuang said, but he had contempt in his heart. What threat could a small city along the coast pose to him?

The only one who could threaten him was Broken Sword, and he had already died at his master's hands.

Ye Xinhuo's status in the north had gone up tremendously as a result, so as his disciple, he couldn't embarrass his master.

As long as he could accomplish the task given to him by Master Luo, then he might be allowed to enter the battle to get Shengcheng's illegal circle back.

Ye Kuang also knew that Ye Xinhuo wanted him to become the new spokesperson in Shengcheng for the Luo family.

Ye Xinhuo wanted him to replace Master Fu and regain control of Shengcheng's illegal circle!

After giving him a few more instructions, Ye Xinhuo didn't say anymore and went to his room to rest.

He had to recover as quickly as possible. The north was a dangerous and competitive place, so he could not let his guard down at anytime.

The Luo family was currently in an awkward position. If they couldn't regain control of Shengcheng's illegal circle, then all the progress they made would go back by several years. If that happened, he would have to do even more work to bring their influence back up.

"Master Fu, I never imagined you and Broken Sword would be this vicious."

Ye Xinhuo's eyes grew cold. "And I nearly died thanks to the two of you!"

But too bad – the one who survived was Ye Xinhuo himself.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

There were people continually coming into Shengcheng's illegal circle.

Most of them were from the north, but there were also a few from the south trying their luck.

But the moment they saw that there were people from the north, they all quietly retreated.

The few parties interested in taking over Shengcheng started to quietly fight for control of the illegal circle, and a violent conflict would arise from time to time.

Shengcheng's illegal circle continued to be volatile like this.

But there was no response from Donghai.

It was like an otherworldly paradise, independent from the rest of the world.

Donghai was famous as a forbidden territory. Besides, how could Donghai be compared to a huge cake like Shengcheng?

Jiang Ning's thoughts were all focused on Lin Yuzhen.

When he had time, he would go to the training facility and give the wolves a few pointers.

Right now.

Just looking at it was terrifying in itself.

This sort of training might kill someone.

It was extremely dangerous, so if one wasn't careful you would be injured. If you were unlucky, you might just die.

But the number of people at this training facility never reduced in number.

Everyone was putting in his best effort!

Nobody wanted to be left behind and nobody wanted to be eliminated. There were plenty of others who were waiting to replace them, so nobody dared to be too laze around.

"Wanna know what it feels like to stand at the peak?"

"Wanna follow Big Boss and stand at the peak of the world?"

"Wanna know how much more powerful you can become?"

"Then you'd better train hard! Either die training or train until you die!"

This group was basically a bunch of nutcases. Even those soldiers that Jiang Ning had picked from one in ten thousand to train would probably be filled with respect for Brother Gou and the other wolves.

They were really tough and really manly!

At Lin Group.

The projects in Shengcheng had started and they were doing well. They were now advancing towards a better direction.

It wouldn't be long before Lin Group could stand on its own two feet in Shengcheng.

Lin Yuzhen was so happy.

She massaged her neck. After finishing her work here, she wanted to take a good bath, have a good meal and then have a good night's sleep.

"Let's go to the hot spring," she looked up at Jiang Ning who was sitting on the sofa. "My shoulders are aching."

"Sure, let's go," Jiang Ning smiled and nodded.

As they walked out of the office, a few employees were also packing up and getting ready to knock off.

"CEO Lin, Brother Ning!" The staff started greeting them.

"It's been hard on everyone, you guys have worked till so late. Want to go soak in a hot spring and get a spa session?"

Jiang Ning smiled, "My treat."

He scanned the staff and his gaze stopped at a new female employee for two seconds. "You can come along too, this isn't a benefit for only senior employees."

The female employee was a little shocked, but there was a look of surprise in her eyes.

She could go too?

"YAY!"

"Thank you Brother Ning! Thank you CEO Lin!"

"Chen Yu, let's go together! Our Brother Ning is the best person in the world! I want to stay in Lin Group forever! Teehee!"

"Forever isn't enough! After I have children I want them to work for Lin Group too! I'll come and beg Brother Ning to take them in, ok?"

The female employees started chattering and were so noisy.

They didn't have to be too serious in front of Jiang Ning because they knew he was a nice person who always took good care of the younger girls working in the company.

"You girls are terrible! Do you want your pay to be docked? I'm the CEO here!" Lin Yuzhen pretended to pull a long face. But of course, everyone knew that Lin Yuzhen's temperament was even better. "Besides, in my family, I have the last say!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

It was true that Lin Yuzhen had the final say.

"CEO Lin! Let me carry your handbag!"

"CEO Lin, your skin is really good today, you're getting prettier and prettier!"

"CEO Lin, you're my goddess!"

All the ladies ran over to Lin Yuzhen and started buttering her up.

When they were at work, Lin Yuzhen was always very stern and firm. But outside of office hours, she was very approachable. She was still fairly young, so it really wasn't her personality to keep a cold and distant face on all the time.

Jiang Ning brought Lin Yuzhen and a small group of female employees to the hot spring.

"Teehee, CEO Lin, our pool is not very big, so don't squeeze in with us."

"That's right, Brother Ning's side is much bigger!"

"We're going in to soak, thanks Brother Ning!"

These girls were all very sharp, so they quickly pushed Lin Yuzhen over to Jiang Ning's side and then ran into the pool next door.

Jiang Ning was very pleased. He hadn't treated them well for nothing.

Lin Yuzhen didn't say anything, but her face was a little red.

It was one thing to know and another thing to be seen.

Now all these girls knew she soaked in the same pool as Jiang Ning.

"What are you looking at? Go in!" Lin Yuzhen noticed Jiang Ning laughing at her and snapped at him.

She had already decided that they were going to take one side each, just in case Jiang Ning suddenly wanted to measure her legs again.

Meanwhile.

The female employees in the pool next door were enjoying themselves.

"It's so comfortable!"

"If Brother Ning treats me to a soak in the hot spring, I'd gladly work overtime everyday!"

"Dream on! You want to play gooseberry everyday? Someone might dock your pay!"

All of them started laughing and chattering happily.

Chen Yu had just entered Lin Group not too long ago and wasn't very used to the working culture in Lin Group.

The companies she used to work at had severe cases of office politics. Everyone was always afraid of someone else competing with them or stealing their resources.

They were always scheming against one another and trying to outsmart each other, and she was very tired of it all.

After she resigned, someone recommended Donghai to her, saying that there were a lot of opportunities here. So she decided to come to Donghai and also decided to try her luck at the famous Lin Group.

She couldn't believe she was actually hired.

But the more surprising thing was that after she entered Lin Group, she discovered that the working environment in this company was unbelievably wonderful.

The salary and benefits were good, the staff were united and had the same goal of wanting to contribute to Lin Group and help the company to advance. Everything was fair and done by the book, and you had to use your own efforts to get what you wanted.

She liked this company almost immediately.

And today, the CEO and the alleged real boss of the company, actually treated the staff to a soak in the hot spring and a spa session.

This place looked fairly expensive.

"Chen Yu, what are you thinking about?"

Xiaozhao noticed that Chen Yu was just soaking in the pool quietly, so she said, "Don't be nervous, after you get used to it, you'll find that everyone in Lin Group are all really nice to work with."

"The Chairman and CEO, and Brother Ning are even nicer!"

Chen Yu nodded. She could tell. Almost everyone spoke well of the Chairman Lin Wen and the CEO Lin Yuzhen.

And now there was also Jiang Ning, the one the girls all called Brother Ning.

"Is this Brother Ning CEO Lin's husband?"

"That's right," Xiaozhao nodded. "In the past many people thought that CEO Lin was on the losing end for finding a husband like Brother Ning. But now..."

She had a sad face as she said, "I wish the one on the losing end was me!"

Her eyes started to sparkle. "Brother Ning is my idol, the lover of my dreams! I have to find a boyfriend who's at least 10% as amazing as Brother Ning!"

"No! 1% as amazing is enough!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Chen Yu was completely dumbfounded.

This Jiang Ning was so outstanding?

It wasn't easy for anyone to get a job in Lin Group. Xiaozhao and the other girls were all very outstanding young ladies themselves.

But now they were all crazy diehard fans.

"You can't say such things in front of CEO Lin," reminded Chen Yu. She had gone through some years of working and struggling to survive in the corporate world.

"Oh you don't have to be afraid," replied Xiaozhao very directly. "Everyone just says all these things for fun, but we all know that Brother Ning only has eyes for CEO Lin. Even if a fairy falls from the sky, he wouldn't look at her."

Chen Yu was even more surprised that such a devoted man still existed in this world. That was admirable indeed.

The more they talked, the more curious she became about Jiang Ning and the more she admired him.

She also admired Lin Yuzhen's magnanimity and kindheartedness, as well as the positive and forward looking business culture of Lin Group.

She felt like she had come to the right place.

She felt that perhaps it was already destined that she should stay in Donghai. She didn't have any family here, but she felt warm and fuzzy.

After soaking in the hot spring, the bunch of vain ladies had a spa session to brighten up their skin.

If Jiang Ning hadn't paid for them, they wouldn't bear to come to such an expensive place.

After having a good time of relaxation, everyone felt like they could fly.

At the entrance of the club, Xiaozhao and the other girls stood in one row, bowed together and said very loudly, "Thank you boss!"

"Tsk don't do this," Jiang Ning didn't know whether to laugh or cry. "If others see how you girls are behaving, they would think I've done something terrible to all of you."

He waved his hand and a driver came running along.

"Xiaozhao and the few of you live in the same area, so you can take that car and the driver will send all of you home. Don't be late tomorrow, otherwise I'll dock your pay, no negotiation allowed."

"Yes boss!"

"Bye bye, CEO Lin!"

All of them happily got into the car like chirpy little sparrows.

"Where do you stay?" Jiang Ning turned to look at Chen Yu.

"Me? I don't stay too far from this place, I can take a cab back myself," replied Chen Yu with a quick smile when she heard Jiang Ning ask her.

"You're not answering my question. I'm asking where you stay," repeated Jiang Ning.

If Lin Yuzhen weren't standing there too, Chen Yu would have misunderstood what Jiang Ning wanted to do.

"I stay at East Street."

"Get into our car then," Jiang Ning waved. "CEO Lin wants to talk to you about some work matters."

When she heard it was about work, Chen Yu didn't refuse anymore. She got into the back seat with Lin Yuzhen.

Jiang Ning had already told Lin Yuzhen who Chen Yu really was when they were in the hot spring. He also told her that Master Fu had passed on and had asked him to take care of Chen Yu.

Lin Yuzhen was a clever girl and knew that Master Fu didn't want Chen Yu to know about this, so she didn't say anything. She only thought to herself that she was going to make sure Chen Yu stayed in Donghai and stayed in Lin Group.

She knew that Chen Yu was all by herself and had nobody to rely on.

The two of them were like sisters, chatting more and more excitedly. After talking about work, they started talking about food, about cosmetics, and even about the toys they liked. Lin Yuzhen nearly let slip about that ragdoll from Master Fu.

Jiang Ning continued to drive quietly and didn't care about what the two ladies behind were talking about.

He dared to tell Lin Yuzhen some of these things because he knew Lin Yuzhen would handle it well.

Jiang Ning would occasionally look in the rear mirror. He wasn't looking at Chen Yu, but neither was he looking at Lin Yuzhen.

He was looking at the person following behind them. How long more was he going to follow them for?



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

It was past 10PM, and there were still a number of cars on the road.

But Jiang Ning could tell that there was a black car behind them that kept a particular distance from his car.

Nobody in Donghai dared to trail him like this. So clearly, this person wasn't from Donghai.

Jiang Ning's expression didn't look suspicious as he smiled, "The factory in the countryside is now at a very high rate of production, but I think we can increase its productivity further."

"I've looked at your resume and this is your expertise, so Yuzhen and I discussed this and we've decided to hand this project to you. What do you think?"

Chen Yu froze for a while, but she was pleasantly surprised.

She had just joined Lin Group not too long ago, and the bosses already trusted her so much?

"Can I really take this project?"

"I'm asking you," replied Jiang Ning with a smile.

Chen Yu found it hard to believe and looked at Lin Yuzhen.

"I believe you can," Lin Yuzhen nodded too. "I've seen your achievements in your previous company. It will be a little challenging, but I'm sure you can do it."

Chen Yu took a deep breath.

"Thank you CEO Lin for believing in me, thank you Brother Ning!"

"I'll take it!"

She didn't want to let Lin Yuzhen and Jiang Ning down since they believed in her ability.

She had never run into anything like that, and she had definitely never imagined she could work for such a boss.

Gaining the trust of others was such a beautiful thing.

"We let you join Lin Group because we saw that you're capable in this area, so we're confident," Lin Yuzhen assured her.

She glanced at Jiang Ning and said, "Since you'll be changing positions, then your benefits will change as well. You can consider what salary you think you ought to get and let me know again."

"CEO Lin, there's no need to change anything."

Chen Yu quickly shook her head. Her salary was already very high, and she hadn't even produced any results yet. "I'm very happy with my current salary, and I'd like to produce some results first."

Since she hadn't proved herself, then she couldn't possibly talk about her salary.

Chen Yu was really surprised. She had worked for a while now and she knew how amazing it felt to be able to gain the trust of the bosses and to be given an important project.

So now the most important thing was to make sure she produced good results!

She suddenly understood how amazing the working culture of Lin Group was. She hadn't entered the company for very long, but she had caught on as well.

"Sure, as long as you produce results, Lin Group will definitely reward you. I can guarantee you that," said Lin Yuzhen.

Jiang Ning looked in the rear mirror and calmly said, "This job is a little tough and you might have to spend most of your time at the factory. So you don't have to stay at your current place anymore, you can move to the factory. The hostel at the factory isn't too bad."

"No problem," Chen Yu nodded.

"We'll take you over there to have a look, then if you need anything else just let us know." Jiang Ning turned and brought Lin Yuzhen and Chen Yu towards the factory.

Lin Yuzhen was a little surprised. Why was he in such a hurry?

They had discussed this matter earlier and had decided to do this so that Chen Yu would have a reason to remain in Donghai.

But wasn't he in too big of a hurry? It was so late already.

But Lin Yuzhen never questioned what Jiang Ning did because she knew that he knew what to do.

Chen Yu most certainly had no objections.

She was so excited now.

Being able to see the factory now was a good thing. That way, she could start first thing the next morning and get used to everything as early as possible.

Jiang Ning started driving the car towards the factory and the car behind started to increase the distance between the two cars as if it was puzzled by the direction the car in front was taking. But it still followed behind Jiang Ning anyway.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Before they reached the factory, Jiang Ning called Mr Xu and told him that he was getting a brilliant new partner, so Mr Xu quickly came to wait at the entrance.

Jiang Ning and the two ladies got out at the entrance.

"Brother Ning! CEO Lin!" Mr Xu ran up to greet them.

"And this must be Miss Chen?"

Chen Yu quickly replied, "Supervisor Xu, you're too polite. I'm Chen Yu, you can just call me by name."

"You guys talk about what you want to call each other later."

Lin Yuzhen was so amused. "Chen Yu has a lot of experience in operations, so both of you will make a good team to increase the productivity of the factory. Chen Yu will also live here, so I'll count on you to take good care of her."

"CEO Lin, don't worry, we'll make sure the factory does well!"

"Alright then, you can take her around. It's getting late, so Chen Yu can stay at the hostel tonight. I'll get someone to move her things over tomorrow," said Jiang Ning.

"Sure!"

Mr Xu had no objections.

Jiang Ning didn't say anymore and left with Lin Yuzhen.

Mr Xu brought Chen Yu on a tour of the factory so that she could take a look at their assembly lines, then he brought her to the factory hostel.

Chen Yu was surprised to find that this factory's hostel was so much nicer than the apartment she rented.

"Lin Group places a lot of importance on their staff. Chairman Lin said many times before that he wants to make sure every Lin Group worker feels happy and well taken care of," Mr Xu said proudly when he saw how surprised Chen Yu looked. "Chen Yu, welcome to the Lin Group family!"

"Thank you!"

They shook hands.

It was too late, so Chen Yu didn't go back to her place and stayed the night at

the factory's hostel. She could move house the next day. She only had one suitcase worth of things anyway.

Jiang Ning was in the car with Lin Yuzhen and she kept opening her mouth to speak but didn't say anything.

"Just say what you want to say."

"You seem to have purposely sent Chen Yu to that factory." Lin Yuzhen asked, "Do you have some other plans for her?"

"I'm protecting her," Jiang Ning didn't hide this from Lin Yuzhen.

Lin Yuzhen immediately understood.

Master Fu had died, and since Chen Yu was his one and only daughter, they had to constantly keep a lookout for her.

She was quiet for a while. She looked at Jiang Ning and there a flash of anxiety in her eyes.

"Jiang Ning, is your world a very dangerous place?"

Lin Yuzhen wasn't a dumb girl. In fact she was very intelligent.

If she still hadn't realized that Jiang Ning's world was an extremely dangerous one by now, then she was really obtuse.

"It's pretty dangerous to other people, but it's not dangerous to me," Jiang Ning replied her honestly.

He would never allow Lin Yuzhen to step into that dark world, but it was safer for her to know a thing or two about it.

He didn't tell her that he was the most dangerous to other people.

"You have to be careful, ok?" Lin Yuzhen said quietly, "I don't want you to get hurt."

When she thought about those scars on Jiang Ning's body, Lin Yuzhen felt her heart ache.

"Wifey,"

"Hmm?"

"The only one who can hurt me is you. Would you hurt me?"

Lin Yuzhen shook her head after a while. "No I won't."

"Then can I hug you to sleep tonight?"

Lin Yuzhen was speechless.

Meanwhile,

There was a black car parked a few hundred yards away from the factory. It had turned off its headlights and disappeared into the dark night.

"She's actually going to stay in this countryside factory tonight?"

Ye Kuang was in the car and burst out laughing coldly with murder written in his eyes.

"What was all that about Donghai being forbidden territory? It's as if I've come to a place where there isn't a single soul around. The countryside is even better! After I've killed her, it'll be easy to dispose of her!"

He got out of the car and disappeared into the night.

But what he didn't know was that he was like a tiger who had walked into the wolves' den!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Chen Yu lay on the bed in the factory's hostel and felt like she was dreaming.

These few days had passed like a dream.

She had been placed in foster care for as long as she could remember. After she became an adult, she lived by herself.

She had never known familial love and never felt any warmth of any sort.

She always felt like she was someone abandoned by the world. She didn't know who she was and didn't know who her parents were.

For the past twenty odd years, she felt like she didn't fit into this world at all.

Happiness and joy always seemed to belong to someone else and never to her.

But today she finally felt a sense of belonging.

It was a sort of familial love, a heartwarming feeling.

Chen Yu never imagined that this feeling would come from a corporation.

"Go to bed! From tomorrow onwards, I'm going to work hard!"

She had a smile on her face, as if she had found her direction in life and found the life she wanted.

It was late at night.

Ye Kuang was like a ghost hiding in the darkness as he kept moving towards the hostel room where Chen Yu was in.

Killing someone was not difficult at all. Especially since she was just an ordinary woman.

Swoosh...

He started moving more quickly and there was a dagger in his hand.

He was like a tiger that was coming to pounce on his prey!

But suddenly...

A very frightening presence could be felt!

Ye Kuang's gaze changed and he immediately stood where he was.

He looked carefully and it looked like there were several wolves staring at him in the night.

Those eyes were just short of glowing green!

When they saw him, those eyes became brighter and brighter. They were excited, angry and insanely murderous!

"I can't believe someone dared to sneak in here."

"He doesn't have any regard for us huh?"

"Or maybe he thinks that others call Donghai a forbidden territory for fun?"

One figure stepped out. Brother Gou wasn't even wearing a shirt. His swollen muscular body was completely different from what he looked like just a few months ago.

Another figure walked out and his face was filled with murder. "Nobody is to snatch this one from me tonight."

"What do you mean I can't snatch this one? Number 8, I'm not going to let you have your way."

"Then we should stop chattering here. Attack all at once, and whoever kills him gets to claim him."

One figure after another emerged from the darkness and Ye Kuang's expression became nasty.

He didn't expect so many highly skilled fighters to be here.

And all of them were very strong.

There were thirty of them!

And they were actually fighting over who should kill him?

So arrogant!

So audacious!

There was nobody more audacious than he was!

"Who...are you?!" asked Ye Kuang in a cold voice. He was all prepared to fight.

He was surprised because he hadn't sensed anyone here when he first came

in. But from the looks of it, they had been waiting for him all along.

"We're people who want you dead!"

Brother Gou didn't bother talking anymore.

If he was one step late, then his brothers would claim this fellow!

"Attack!"

This was the first time they got a chance to fight after they had gone through the next level of training. All the restless energy that Brother Gou and the wolves had suppressed for so long exploded in an instant!

BOOM!

They pounced on him. These thirty men were like thirty wolves!

They were crazy!

Vicious!

Cruel!

"You're asking for it!" Ye Kuang was furious. How dare these people say that they want to kill him?

They could dream on!

He swung his fists towards them, but these people didn't even dodge. Instead, they looked at him even more excitedly and reached their hands out to catch his fists!

If he was caught by them and the rest attacked him together, then he was going to die.

Were these men all crazy?

Ye Kuang quickly retreated and grew fearful as he watched them chase after him.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

This was definitely a bunch of nutcases. They didn't fear death at all.

In fact, whoever could hold themselves back for a few seconds so that the other party could attack them felt very happy about it.

What crazy place was this?!

Run!

Ye Kuang had only made one move but he decided to run.

"You wanna escape? Too late!"

Brother Gou roared as he spread his arms wide and his energy had reached the peak of its viciousness.

Whoever dared to make trouble in Donghai deserved to die. Ye Kuang actually tried to kill someone at their training headquarters - did he think they didn't exist?

BOOM! BOOM! BOOM!

The battle instantly exploded!

Thirty of them surrounded Ye Kuang to kill him.

Even though Ye Kuang had two fists, they were no match for the sixty that kept coming for him. After a few moments, Ye Kuang had collapsed onto the ground. His limbs were broken and he was howling in agony.

His face was filled with horror. He couldn't believe that this place had so many skilled fighters.

Never mind thirty of them. Even if there were just three of them guarding this place, it was impossible to kill Chen Yu.

"You..." Ye Kuang convulsed on the ground from the terrible pain.

"Take him away!" Brother Gou couldn't be bothered with him. "Don't let him disturb the folks sleeping here!"

They quickly brought Ye Kuang into a warehouse. Even though his limbs were all broken, they still chained him down.

"Tell me now!" Brother Gou punched Ye Kuang's stomach. "Who are you and what are you doing in Donghai?"

"And you're quite highly skilled too. If I had to fight you alone I might lose."

"But too bad, I have brothers with me!"

Ye Zhang opened his mouth and vomited from the punch. He was even puking bile now.

"If you dare to kill me, Donghai is doomed!" Ye Kuang yelled out arrogantly.

They replied him with punches.

"Brother Gou, you're tired, so I'll take over!" Number 6 went up to take over Brother Gou's position. He laughed coldly, "I punched the least number of times earlier, so I'm going to make up for it now!"

Ye Kuang watched as the men started lining up to take turns to punch him. He started shuddering.

He was going to be beaten to death at this rate!

"What...what are you trying to do?!" Ye Kuang started yelling in fear. "Let me go! Let me go!"

Nobody cared about what he said. They only replied him with more punches.

"AHHHH!!!!"

"AHHHH!!!!"

His howls of pain echoed through the warehouse.

Ye Kuang never imagined he would perish in Donghai, and he never thought he would meet such a terrible end.

He was Ye Xinhuo's pride, but before he could even display what he was capable of, he had been surrounded and his limbs were broken.

Brother Gou and the rest spent the rest of the night teaching Ye Kuang a lesson. They were too excited to sleep.

Whoever dared to step into their training ground to kill someone was challenging them!

"Let...let me off..."

Ye Kuang's face was covered with blood as he continued to howl and cry. His voice was already much softer than before, but he still refused to tell them who

he was.

There was no way he was admitting that he was sent by the Luo family.

Brother Gou lit a cigarette and inhaled deeply.

The sun had risen, so Jiang Ning was going to come over soon.

If they couldn't get Ye Kuang to tell them who he was before Jiang Ning arrived, then that would make them look bad.

"Number 2, Number 5, I think we can't carry on like this," Brother Gou blew a mouthful of smoke out. "Big Boss taught us before, we have to use our example to make others listen to us."

The rest nodded.

"But Big Boss isn't here yet."

Brother Gou took another drag and the end of the cigarette burned bright red.

Number 2 and Number 5 immediately went up and pressed against Ye Kuang's head.

"What are you trying to do? What do you want?!"

Brother Gou stretched his cigarette butt towards Ye Kuang's eye.

It was only a few inches away from Ye Kuang's eye and he could feel the heat coming from the cigarette butt. He began to panic.

Were all these men completely insane?!

"If I can't convince you with my actions, then I'll have to use an old method. Don't be scared, the sound of something sizzling is really wonderful to hear."



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

The cigarette butt was coming closer and closer to Ye Kuang's eye.

That burning sensation made Ye Kuang's heart nearly jump out.

They were crazy!

They were definitely all crazy!

"Stop! Stop it!" Ye Kuang yelled loudly.

But Brother Gou didn't stop. He continued to bring the cigarette butt closer and closer.

"My hand isn't voice controlled, you know."

He slowly moved the cigarette butt and Ye Kuang could see the tobacco inside burning steadily within the cigarette.

It hadn't touched his eyeball yet, but Ye Kuang could already hear sizzling sounds in his head.

He tried to struggle but the two men held him down so he couldn't move at all. He could only watch as that bright red fiery cigarette butt came closer and closer!

"I'll talk! I'll talk!"

Ye Kuang finally gave in.

He had great willpower from years of martial arts training, but he had never been through something like this. How could he endure it?

Brother Gou's hand stopped. The cigarette butt was less than an inch away from Ye Kuang's eye.

Brother Gou frowned when he heard that Ye Kuang was willing to talk. "Or why don't you endure it for a little longer?"

Ye Kuang was really going mad.

"I'll talk! I'll say it now!"

"My name is Ye Kuang! My master is Ye Xinhuo! You can't touch me!"

"If you dare to kill me, my master will wipe all of you out!"

PAK!

Brother Gou slapped him.

"I told you to answer my question, not to threaten me!"

He grabbed Ye Kuang's hair and said fiercely, "I'm not afraid of death. So besides getting yourself beaten up some more, threatening me is meaningless, you get it?"

Ye Kuang never thought that he would land in this state despite being Ye Xinhuo's pride and joy.

He was now pressed against the ground by a bunch of gangsters.

He was angry!

He was hateful!

He wanted to fight back and kill Brother Gou and the rest, but he didn't have the chance to do that now, and he didn't even know if he would make it out of this place alive.

"L...I got it."

He had to behave humbly around them, otherwise he was very sure that Brother Gou was going to stab his cigarette butt into his eye.

This was a bunch of madmen.

But once they switched to this method, it was much easier to get Ye Kuang to talk.

Even though Ye Kuang was famous in the north and was nicknamed Fierce Tiger, the moment he landed in these wolves' hands, he was just a cat.

After eating breakfast, Jiang Ning sent Lin Yuzhen to the office before coming to the training facility.

He was pretty sure Brother Gou and the rest would have gotten all the answers he wanted after an entire night.

When he reached the warehouse, Ye Kuang's face was deathly pale and his eyes were bloodshot. He looked like he was going to collapse anytime.

Jiang Ning could understand how he got to this state since he landed in the wolves' hands.

This bunch could be really violent if they really had to.

They were all men who spent years at the bottommost rung of society after all.

"Big Boss!" Brother Gou went forward to greet Jiang Ning with a smile. "We got all the answers."

"Did you convince him by being a good example?"

"Of course! We will always remember what you taught us! We will always set a good example!"

Brother Gou patted his chest and the rest nodded as well.

Jiang Ning was pleased and laughed.

He walked over to Ye Kuang and he looked up.

"Who...who are you?"

His voice was quite weak.

Those who didn't know what really happened the night before might have thought that these thirty men violated him or something.

"My name is Jiang Ning," said Jiang Ning. "Did you ask for my permission before coming to my territory to kill someone?"

"Jiang Ning?"

Ye Kuang didn't have any memory of this name. There was no such name in the north either.


He shook his head and laughed coldly. "Now that you know who I am, aren't you going to let me go?"

"If my master finds out..."

PAK!

Before he could finish his sentence, Jiang Ning gave him a tight slap and sent two of Ye Kuang's teeth flying.

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

He turned his head violently and stared at Brother Gou, "Didn't you tell him our rules?"

Brother Gou stood up straight and yelled at Ye Kuang, "Bloody hell, I told you already that threats are pointless, and you still dared to do this?"

"And you even tried to threaten my Big Boss? You're asking for it."

Brother Gou punched him several times. Ye Kuang started howling again and his voice slowly became softer.

"Alright now," Jiang Ning waved his hands. "Don't be so rough, I told you to set a good example if you want to convince others."

Ye Kuang nearly puked blood out when he heard this.

What sort of shitty example was this?!

He was going to die from all this punching!

But if he didn't threaten or tell Jiang Ning that his master was Ye Xinhuo, Jiang Ning might really kill him.

Jiang Ning squatted down and stared at Ye Kuang. His eyes were as calm as water and Ye Kuang suddenly felt great fear.

His eyes were so calm and so deep. They were like a whirlpool that would suck him in if he was not careful, and he would never come out of it again!

It was just the way Jiang Ning was looking at him. Why was it so terrifying?

"Your master is Ye Xinhuo, right?"

Jiang Ning said, "As in the Ye Xinhuo who works for the Luo family?"

Ye Kuang didn't dare to say a word.

He suddenly felt a terrible fear rise from his heart. He didn't even know why.

It was as if a terrifying wild beast was standing in front of him!

Jiang Ning looked calm, but he still struck fear in Ye Kuang's heart.

He wanted to use his master's name to threaten Jiang Ning, but Jiang Ning didn't seem fearful at all.

"Do you know what it means when I say that Donghai is a forbidden territory?"

Ye Kuang remained silent, but his breathing had quickened and he started feeling nervous and uneasy.

"It means that even if your master, Ye Xinhuo, comes here and makes trouble, I will kill him off!"

This sentence from Jiang Ning exuded a tremendous amount of murderous intent. Ye Kuang felt his body grow cold, as if he had fallen onto an iceberg.

"You..."

Ye Kuang wanted to say that Jiang Ning was too audacious, but he suddenly couldn't get the words out of his mouth.

They were already at the tip of his tongue but he simply couldn't say them.

"The hand of the Luo family has stretched out too far."

Jiang Ning got up without even looking at Ye Kuang and turned to leave.

"Since he has stretched an arm into Donghai, then I've got to chop it off."

Jiang Ning disappeared from sight. Ye Kuang suddenly realized that his entire body was shaking.

He was fearful!

He was fearful of one man!

This fear came from deep inside his heart and he didn't even know why he was afraid. All Jiang Ning did was to stare at him.

Outside the warehouse, Brother Gou walked over to Jiang Ning.

"Big Boss, what do we do with this fellow?"

Brother Gou wanted to do this sort of person in. Since he dared to make trouble in Donghai, then he should have been prepared to die.

"There are a lot of people sneaking into Shengcheng lately," said Jiang Ning. "It's not too hard to make them fight each other, right?"

Brother Gou's eyes slowly lit up when he heard this.

He suddenly discovered that using his brain to solve a problem was a beautiful thing.

"Not hard at all! I know what to do!" replied Brother Gou immediately.

Lin Group wanted to stabilize themselves in Shengcheng, but that wasn't possible if Shengcheng itself wasn't stable.

Those major powers from the north were coveting the illegal circle of Shengcheng. But gaining control of that place wasn't simple. At the very least, they had to ask Jiang Ning first.

But of course, even if they asked Jiang Ning, he wouldn't have agreed.

Master Fu had used his life in exchange for a breach in the north, so it was time to start his plan to clean up the north.

"Nobody is allowed to affect my precious wife's career," said Jiang Ning calmly. "Whoever dares to stretch an arm out will get his arm chopped off!"

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

Lin Group had expanded into Shengcheng and it was an important matter.

This matter would affect Lin Yuzhen's confidence, and Jiang Ning wasn't going to let anyone bring her down.

If anyone made his precious wife feel unhappy, then the consequences were very severe.

So Shengcheng had to stabilize and be in good order. Nobody was to make trouble!

Even those so called powerful families of the north were not allowed to make trouble either.

If anyone dared to make trouble, then Jiang Ning was going to get nasty!

Jiang Ning left, while Brother Gou and the rest got cracking. They secretly sent Ye Kuang into Shengcheng and delivered him into the hands of his enemy...

Meanwhile.

Lin Wen and Lin Yuzhen were in the meeting room on the highest floor of Lin Group. They were having a meeting with partners from Shengcheng to talk about their next step.

The meeting was a little tense because there was some unsavory competition from Shengcheng's side.

This had impacted the progress of their projects.

The company on Shengcheng's side couldn't solve this by themselves, so they had no choice but to look for Lin Group and see if there was anything they could do.

There was competition everywhere, especially the type that fought tooth and nail.

No matter industry you were in, the leader of the industry had definitely reached the top by stepping on countless corpses.

Now Lin Group was going to face such a problem. They had to go up against the old players of Shengcheng!

"The Jin family?"

Lin Yuzhen was a little surprised when she heard who they were up against.

Of course she remembered this Jin family.

Back then, Jin Ran had tried to hit on her and Jiang Ning eventually broke his legs. Then when he wanted to get a famous doctor to treat his legs, Jiang Ning threw him out of Donghai.

She didn't expect this Jin family to start getting back at them like this.

"Yup, it's that Jin family," the partner company's representative nodded. "The Jin family seems to have received an injection of cash and someone is telling them what to do. So they've become very bold, very decisive and fairly vicious."

"They're not trying to get into a win-win situation with us. They're here to beat us down and to destroy us!"

Lin Wen frowned slightly.

He had heard about how overbearing the Jin family was. But hadn't they quietened down recently?

Why were they doing this just when Lin Group was making its entry into Shengcheng?

"This is a bitter fight to the end," Lin Wen said. "Since the other side is showing no mercy, then we don't have to be polite either. The corporate world is just like a military battlefield after all!"

"Everyone, we're going to fight this war. Lin Group will fight to the very end to prove how determined we are. I hope that everyone here can cooperate with us and make our brand known in this city!"

The tense meeting was over and all the directors got busy.

Lin Yuzhen returned to the office to see Jiang Ning with his legs crossed on the sofa and snacking away.

"You're done with the meeting? Want some?"

Jiang Ning pointed to the snacks on the table. "Xiaozhao hid them away in her drawer but I discovered them."

Lin Yuzhen didn't whether to laugh or cry. This husband of hers was ridiculously domineering when he wanted to be, and everyone would feel their blood rush together with him. But then sometimes he behaved like a small child and bullied some of her staff in this sort of childish manner.

"No thanks, I'm busy," replied Lin Yuzhen. "I need to go to Shengcheng in a

couple of days, our competitor has started to make their move.”

“In a couple of days?”

Jiang Ning's first thought was that Shengcheng wasn't a very peaceful place right now.

“Yeah, I have to go this time,” Lin Yuzhen said helplessly as she sighed.

If she didn't settle the Jin family, then it would be hard for Lin Group to stand on its own two feet in Shengcheng. And they might even have to pay a high price for trying.

That wasn't what she wanted.

Even though Lin Wen said that they would put in all their efforts to win this battle, Lin Yuzhen hoped that they could settle this in a more peaceful manner.

The worst would be for both sides to suffer damages.

“Ok, I'll go with you,” said Jiang Ning with a smile.

Lin Yuzhen didn't elaborate further. She focused on analyzing her data and tidying up her reports. Meanwhile, Jiang Ning finished all the snacks and went round the office to see if anyone else had secretly stashed anymore tidbits away.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls...



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Meanwhile.

In Shengcheng.

It was quite disorderly.

The illegal circle in particular, was both fighting with each other and also trying to find a big boat they could tag on to.

To many people, the messier it was, the more opportunities there were. There were many areas that had been fixed for many years and it was hard to find a breakthrough unless it became messy.

The Jin family had gotten such an opportunity.

A powerful family from the north had given the Jin family this opportunity.

In the living room of the Jin house, the aroma of tea filled the place.

"Young Master Qi, my family has been waiting for this day for the longest time!" Jin Yang was full of smiles. "Being able to work with the Qi family of the north is my family's greatest honor!"

Qi Yun, the second son of a second tier family of the north looked fairly ordinary and didn't seem imposing, but he looked very steady.

The other powerful families were looking for a spokesperson in the illegal circle, but he decided to use another method and found a spokesperson in the legal circle instead.

He knew that everyone was just fighting for resources and money. The legal circle could earn money legally, so it wasn't so dangerous either.

If anyone ran into a spokesperson like Master Fu and was bitten back, then they would suffer tremendous losses.

Hadn't the Luo family suffered a lot this time?

Qi Yun had a smile in his eyes as well. He liked hearing what Jin Yang said.

"Mr Jin, you're too polite. We are partners, so we are on equal standing, whose honor it is doesn't matter."

That was what Qi Yun said, but he scoffed with disdain in his heart.

If not for the resources in Tianhai, there was no way such a powerful family in the north would bother working with a tiny family like the Jins.

"Young Master Qi, you're really being too polite! Too polite!" Jin Yang immediately poured wine out. "Let me give a toast to you!"

Qi Yun picked up the wine glass, clinked glasses with Jin Yang and drank half of it down.

"Mr Jin, I took a look at your assets and noticed that you used to be at the forefront of things here. How did you lose so much market share?"

Jin Yang sighed loudly. He had an upset face as he bitterly replied, "It's all because of that Lin Group!"

He waved his hands as if he was a little wary of them and didn't dare to go on.

Qi Yun frowned.

Lin Group?

What was this Lin Group? He had never heard of them.

This was something that would affect the Qi family's plan to make money out of Tianhai, so he had to take notice.

"Which Lin Group is this? I've never heard of any powerful Lin families in the north."

"They're not from the north," Jin Yang laughed hollowly. "Lin Group is from Donghai, a small city in the state of Tianhai."

Qi Yun burst out laughing loudly.

Lin Group was from a small city but it could take so much market share away from the Jin family?

"I've been making counter attacks on them and I'm slowly taking back our share of the market. But I'm afraid we'll need a few months to hit your target."

"A few months? That's too slow," Qi Yun went straight to the point. "I'm don't have that much patience."

The fight for Shengcheng's resources couldn't last for a few months. The moment the situation settled down, it would be hard to change it again for at least the next decade or so.

So he had to act fast now!

"Tell you what, send someone to tell Lin Group that the Qi family has their eye

on this territory and they have to work with the Jin family, everyone else can get lost."

He smiled coldly and there was a contemptuous look on his face. "Don't force me to make a move, otherwise I don't know if their company can continue running or not!"

Qi Yun had finally said the word!

He finally said those words!

Jin Yang had been waiting for him to say this for several days now.

With a powerful family from the north backing him, how would Lin Group be able to hold up? How long more could they throw their weight around like that?

The Qi family was a powerful family from the north!

Jin Yang really hated Donghai, Lin Group and that Jiang Ning to the core.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls...



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

His only son's legs had been broken by Jiang Ning, then because of this matter, Lu Xun had played with the woman he loved the most, and Lu Xun even did it in front of him!

Now Lin Group had entered Shengcheng's market and kept pushing the Jin family out.

This was a bitter fight to the end!

The Jin family had been losing all this while, but now it wasn't the same anymore. It was completely different.

Jin Yang got very excited when he heard Qi Yun say those words.

"Young Master Qi, you have to be careful around this Lin Group," Jin Yang added on, but he clearly sounded like he was challenging Qi Yun as well. "Apparently anybody who offends them doesn't meet with a good end, so if we..."

Jin Yang said it in a roundabout manner and sounded like he was warning Qi Yun, and Qi Yun didn't like the sound of that.

"I have to be careful?"

Qi Yun narrowed his eyes and glanced at Jin Yang. He didn't bother hiding the contempt on his face. "Mr Jin, I'm not sure if you realize how big the difference between an ordinary family and a powerful family from the north is."

"It's like the difference between heaven and earth, that's how big. It's a difference that ordinary people like you will never overcome all your life, get it?"

"Got it! Got it!"

"No worries, you can send someone over and tell them my name. As long as these Lins aren't stupid, they would know what to do."

A Lin family from a tiny city? Qi Yun wanted to laugh just hearing about it.

Would they dare to go up against a powerful family from the north?

That would be overestimating themselves!

That would be asking to be humiliated!

"Sure! I'll let Jin Ran do this then!" said Jin Yang immediately.

He turned to look at Jin Ran who was seated quietly on one side.

After his legs had gotten well, Jin Ran's personality became very violent.

This was all thanks to Jiang Ning!

Now all he thought about was taking revenge. He wanted to kill Jiang Ning, then press Lin Yuzhen onto the floor and vent his anger out on her.

"Ran'er!" Jin Yang purposely spoke in a much louder voice. "Why don't you give a toast to Young Master Qi?"

Jin Ran immediately picked up his glass. "Young Master Qi, there are plenty of places to have fun in Shengcheng. How about I take you out tomorrow to have some fun?"

Their glances met and Qi Yun knew immediately what sort of place Jin Ran was going to bring him to.

"I'm not interested in ordinary ones."

"Young Master Qi, don't you worry. There are a few new Japanese ones that will definitely satisfy you!"

Qi Yun immediately started laughing loudly.

He picked up his glass, "Then I have to rest well and get myself ready for tomorrow."

"Sure! Young Master Qi, please go ahead!"

Jin Ran drank everything down and got up. He couldn't wait.

He couldn't wait for Jiang Ning to die, for Lin Group to be destroyed, and for Lin Yuzhen to kneel down in front of him and beg for mercy!

Jin Ran went ahead without hesitation. He was so confident, he didn't even bring a bodyguard along.

He was now the representative of the Qi family in the north!

He represented Qi Yun, the second son of the Qi family!

What was Lin Group and Jiang Ning in front of the Qi family? They would probably shudder in fear.

After settling Jiang Ning and Lin Group, he would take good care of Qi Yun, so their relationship with the Qi family would become even better. He could already see where the Jin family was headed in the future.

When that happened, he, Jin Ran, would become the most powerful person in Shengcheng!

Jin Ran stepped hard on the accelerator. He couldn't wait at all and sped through the highway. The violent look on his face became more and more severe.

"Jiang Ning...prepare to kneel in front of me to beg for mercy!"

Even if he was just the Qi family's dog, that was enough to put pressure on those in Donghai.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Meanwhile.

Lin Yuzhen and the rest were getting ready in the office.

They were going to Shengcheng to do a market survey so that they could plan their next step well.

Jiang Ning was downstairs and secretly taking a smoke since Lin Yuzhen hadn't come down yet.

DADADA...

Jiang Ning heard the sound of high heels coming through the lobby and quickly put his cigarette out and threw it into the bin.

He quickly took a piece of chewing gum out from his pocket and started chewing it.

"Let's go," said Lin Yuzhen.

Jiang Ning didn't say anything. He opened the door and she got in, then everyone else also got into their cars.

He was about to get into the driver's seat when a limited edition Ferrari screeched to a halt and blocked their way.

Jiang Ning frowned slightly. Who dared to make trouble here?

KA!

The car door opened and Jin Ran stepped out.

He had a murderous look on his face, as well as a look of extreme arrogance. He looked coldly at Jiang Ning like he was looking at an ant.

Jiang Ning was surprised to find that this fellow's legs had been healed. That wasn't easy.

But since he dared to come to Donghai, then it was clear that Jin Ran didn't heed his warning.

"Jiang Ning!" Jin Ran bellowed. "Don't you know who I am anymore?"

Jiang Ning nodded. "Of course I do."

"You remember me? Then why aren't you kneeling?!"

Jin Ran hatefully clenched his teeth when he saw Jiang Ning. "I'm here to tell you, my family, the Jin family, is now a partner with the Qi family from the north, you get what I'm trying to say?"

"No I don't."

Jiang Ning remained calm.

"KNEEL DOWN!"

Jin Ran was displeased that he didn't see any fear on Jiang Ning's face. He had already mentioned the Qi family, so why wasn't he afraid?

He probably didn't know what mentioning the Qi family implied!

"The Qi family is a powerful family in the north! Their spokesperson in Shengcheng is MY family! You've offended my family, so today I'm going to settle our feud!"

Jin Ran laughed loudly and looked a bit crazy. He turned to look at the cars behind and noticed Lin Yuzhen in the car. His gaze became even greedier and insane.

"And you Lins! You intend to go to Shengcheng to fight against the Jin family? DREAM ON!"

"Young Master Qi Yun has already said that Lin Group had better give up everything in Shengcheng, otherwise...HA!"

Jin Ran suddenly felt so much better after venting all his anger out.

Would Jiang Ning and Lin Group still dare to say anything since he had come down so hard on them?

Would they dare to go against the Qi family?!

The Qi family was a powerful family of the north! One lowly Jiang Ning and one pathetic Lin Group was nothing!

"Aren't you going to kneel down?!"

Jin Ran started yelling again when he saw that Jiang Ning continued to stand where he was and didn't kneel down to beg for mercy. Jin Ran's face was all red from yelling.

"Are you done talking?" Jiang Ning glanced at Jin Ran.

"This poor thing. After they fixed his legs, now he's got a screw loose."

He waved a hand and Brother Gou immediately came forward. "Break his limbs and send him back to the Jins. Don't let him run around like that."

Jiang Ning then got into the car without even looking at Jin Ran and left with Lin Yuzhen.

"You...How dare you! HOW DARE YOU!"

Jin Ran paled. What was going on?

He had already told them that they were working with the Qi family, so how could Jiang Ning..

He was the spokesperson for Qi Yun! His family was the spokesperson for the Qi family!

"AHHH!"

A bloodcurdling scream came from behind the car.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

The cars moved out as scheduled.

The partners from Shengcheng all knew Jin Ran. They didn't expect the Jin family to send someone over to threaten them directly like this.

They didn't expect Jiang Ning to be this fierce either.

He actually got his men to break Jin Ran's limbs.

Initially they thought that they could negotiate with the Jin family and reach a compromise. But clearly, the Lin family wasn't going to give in, and they didn't seem afraid of the Jins at all.

Even though they had heard that this powerful family from the north was backing them.

Lin Yuzhen had heard what Jin Ran said, so she asked, "Someone's backing the Jin family now?"

She heard Jin Ran mention some powerful family in the north, so that must be some frightening family that they couldn't afford to offend.

Lin Group was still very small, so it would spell trouble for them if they offended anyone they shouldn't.

"Never heard of them," replied Jiang Ning directly. "Nowadays all these third tier families dare to call themselves powerful families like they're top tier families."

He looked at Lin Yuzhen in the rear mirror and sounded pitiful, "Wifey, you have to work harder so that the Lin family becomes a powerful family too, otherwise everybody keeps coming to bully me just because I married into the family."

Lin Yuzhen was worried earlier, but when she heard Jiang Ning say such a funny thing, she burst out laughing.

Who would dare to bully Jiang Ning?

Jiang Ning was the one who told Brother Gou to break Jin Ran's legs again earlier.

Nobody had ever been able to bully Jiang Ning!

But then when she remembered that Jiang Ning was indeed known as a man who married into her family, she felt bad for him.

This idiot was obviously no ordinary man, but he was willing to become a man who married into his wife's family for her sake.

"Ok, I'll work hard so that my hubby can lift his head high," replied Lin Yuzhen seriously.

"Thank you wifey! You're nicer and nicer to me," laughed Jiang Ning in return.

The cars continued to drive towards Shengcheng. Jiang Ning hadn't arrived yet, but everyone already knew that he was on the way to Shengcheng.

Everyone in the illegal circle of Shengcheng started getting nervous.

The Demon King was coming!

The Demon King was coming again!

Demon King was what the folks in Shengcheng called Jiang Ning.

All the bosses in Shengcheng who were previously under Master Fu and had seen Jiang Ning's domineering side for themselves all became excited and scared at the same time when they heard that Jiang Ning was coming to Shengcheng.

There were too many powerful people coming into Shengcheng recently. They were all trying to find a spokesperson and were trying to fight for the resources in Shengcheng.

This made the bosses worry.

They wanted to reject these people, but they were afraid of offending the powerful families of the north.

But if they didn't refuse them, that would be as good as betraying the illegal circle of Shengcheng!

Master Fu's last move before dying had killed so many people. Those were the people who had betrayed Shengcheng before, so nobody dared to do this again.

Master Fu liked to scheme and plot, but Jiang Ning was much more direct.

One punch was all it took to kill you!

So all the surviving bosses didn't dare to betray the city at all. They didn't even dare to think about it.

They had been under tremendous pressure and they were about to give in. But now Jiang Ning was coming!

This Demon King was coming!

Even when faced with Lu Qian or even Zhou Hua, who were both backed by a powerful family in the north, Jiang Ning had never shown any fear. He said he was going to kill them and he really did. He was never wishy washy about these things.

He didn't fear any of the families in the north at all.

Everyone guessed that Jiang Ning was backed by some really powerful family.

"Mr Jiang is here, Shengcheng will finally stabilize!"

"Mr Jiang is finally here, I'm about to cave in soon!"

"Get ready to welcome Mr Jiang! Everybody, stay alert! Don't offend Mr Jiang!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

In no time, everyone in Shengcheng's illegal circle started moving.

There were lanterns and decorations everywhere as if it was New Year. The bosses had prepared everything beforehand so that they could welcome Jiang Ning anytime with the best that they had.

This reaction made many representatives from powerful families surprised. They didn't understand what was going on.

Shengcheng's illegal circle was still fighting each other to the very death the day before, but they seemed to be friends today, happily shaking hands, exchanging polite words and walking together harmoniously.

What on earth was going on?

Jiang Ning had sent Lin Yuzhen and her business partners to their partner company in Shengcheng and left eight men to protect her. He then brought Brother Gou to the Jin house.

Lin Yuzhen was here to settle some problems, and so was Jiang Ning.

The difference was that Lin Yuzhen was settling the issues that cropped up, while Jiang Ning was going to settle the source of these issues.

At the Jin house.

Jin Yang was in a good mood.

He now had a large tree behind him, so he was enjoying its shade.

The Qi family were a powerful family from the north!

It was a powerful family that was famous even in the north. Once he had this large tree behind him, he figured the Jin family could bring their advancement forward by at least ten years.

"Is Jin Ran back?"

He was very concerned about this now. Jin Ran had gone to Donghai with the instructions from the Qi family. Lin Group should back off now.

Jin Ran would definitely come back with a smug look on his face. That feeling of having taken revenge must feel so good!

"Master Jin, Young Master hasn't returned."

Jin Yang nodded. "This punk is probably too happy and has gone out to

celebrate."

How would Jin Ran celebrate?

He might make that Lin Yuzhen from Lin Group obediently kneel before him and do his bidding.

If not for that Lin Yuzhen, Jin Ran's legs wouldn't have been broken.

"Tsk, what Lin family? In front of the Qi family, they're just ants!"

Jin Yan scoffed disdainfully. "Even that Lu Xun was nothing. They were just a dog for those powerful families."

When he thought about how his favorite woman had been violated by that dog, a fire blazed in his heart.

"When Young Master comes back, arrange everything for him. We must take good care of Young Master Qi, understand?"

Jin Yang went to make some arrangements.

The most important thing right now was to ensure a good relationship with the Qi family.

"I'm afraid you have to find someone else to do the entertaining."

A voice suddenly rang out from the door, then two muffled sounds.

BAM!

BAM!

Two bodies came flying into the house.

Those were the bodyguards that Jin Yang hired at \$50,000 a month!

They had been sent flying so easily?

Jin Yang's expression changed instantly. "Who is it! Who dares to come to my house and make trouble?!"

"Oh my, Mr Jin, so forgetful?"

Jiang Ning sauntered in and looked at Jin Yang as he said calmly, "You even sent your son to threaten me, and now you're asking who I am?"

"Jiang Ning!"

That was the first name that popped into Jin Yang's mind.

He suddenly became nervous again. If Jiang Ning was here, then where was Jin Ran?

"Where's my son?" he asked anxiously.

"He's here."

Jiang Ning waved his hand. Brother Gou immediately dragged Jin Ran in like he was dragging a dead dog along, and threw him onto the floor.

"Ah..."

The terrible pain made Jin Ran regain consciousness.

He wanted to stand up, but he realized that he couldn't feel anything else but pain in his arms and legs.

He noticed that his surroundings were familiar and realized he was home. He looked up to see Jin Yang standing there.

He immediately started shouting, "Dad! Dad! They broke my arms and legs again! Kill them! KILL THEM!"

Jin Yang's entire body was shaking.

Jiang Ning was too audacious!

He broke Jin Ran's limbs again and sent him back to the Jin house. This was challenging Jin Yang!

Jiang Ning was challenging him!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"You're really bold!"

Jin Yang roared loudly and pointed at Jiang Ning, "MEN!"

BAM!

BAM!

BAM!

There were a few muffled sounds followed by howls of pain, then it was completely silent.

Jin Yang looked up to see that all the bodyguards that he hired at a high price had all fallen to the ground. Not a single one was left standing.

They had all collapsed to the ground and were groaning in pain.

Jin Yang's finger was still trembling but he couldn't get a single word out.

Jiang Ning ignored him and just grabbed a chair for himself.

Jin Yang shook even harder from being angry. His face was all red now.

This was his house!

Jiang Ning behaved so casually. Did he not have any regard for the Jin family?

"You...you're too audacious!" Jin Yang said through clenched teeth.

He helped Jin Ran up and looked at Jiang Ning coldly. "This is MY house, so don't you dare behave outrageously here!"

"The outrageous ones are the Jins."

Jiang Ning remained seated on the chair and looked down at Jin Yang and his son. "Lin Group came here to expand our business but we never thought of kicking anybody out of the market. If there's money to be made, we can all make money together. But what did your family do?"

Jin Yang's face paled.

"Your family has been using all these underhanded methods to try to destroy Lin Group, and you think I didn't know about that?" Jiang Ning's expression darkened.

Anything that got in the way of Lin Group and Lin Yuzhen were no small matter.

Jiang Ning wasn't going to be nice about it either.

"I never intended to bother myself with ants like you, but you came knocking on my door."

Jiang Ning's voice was very cold now.

"I give you one day to get out of Shengcheng. If you don't get out in time, don't blame me for getting nasty."

Jin Yang broke out into a cold sweat.

Jiang Ning was being too overbearing now!

He was chasing his family out of Shengcheng.

"You..."

Jin Yang wanted to argue back, but didn't dare to say anything.

All his hired bodyguards had collapsed. If he dared to say anything now, he would probably be beaten to death.

He was filled with hatred.

"What boastful words!"

Suddenly, a voice came from outside the door.

It was authoritative, icy cold and filled with contempt!

It was Qi Yun!

Jin Yang's face instantly lit up. He was so excited! Qi Yun was here!

He was going to see how Jiang Ning could continue being arrogant.

He immediately stood up, helped Jin Ran to sit, then walked to the door to welcome his guest. "Young Master Qi! I'm so glad you're here!"

"This Jiang Ning has attacked us again. He broke Jin Ran's limbs again, came barging into my house and even threatened me into leaving Shengcheng. But my family is now working for the Qi family!"

Qi Yun's expression turned cold as he looked at Jiang Ning.

Jin Ran had gone to pass his message on. Jiang Ning didn't heed his message

and even attacked Jin Ran.

This was a slap in the face for Qi Yun. Jiang Ning was too outrageous.

Now he barged into the Jin house and wanted the Jin family to get out of Shengcheng. Didn't he know that the Jin family was under the care of the Qi family now?

"You really think you're something, eh?" Qi Yun glared at Jiang Ning and shouted coldly, "How dare you be so bold! You even dare to hit someone under the care of the Qi family!"

Jin Yang breathed a sigh of relief and was also very grateful.

Qi Yun said that the Jin family was under the care of the Qi family. So even if they were just the Qi family's dog, they wouldn't be bullied.

What could Jiang Ning do with the Qi family around?

He had to pay a price for doing this!

But Jiang Ning tilted his head to glance at Qi Yun and frowned slightly. "And who the hell are you?"

Qi Yun was taken aback. Then he roared, "I am the second son of the Qi family, Qi Yun!"

"Qi family?"

Jiang Ning frowned even harder.

Qi Yun started laughing coldly when he saw Jiang Ning's expression. "Scared now? Since you had no regard for my family, nobody will be able to save you today!"

"I've never heard of them," Jiang Ning merely shook his head. "What piece of trash is this Qi family?"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"You...you're outrageous!"

Qi Yun was so angry that his entire body was shaking. "You're asking to die!"

"You're the one asking to die!"

Jiang Ning didn't have so much patience. He suddenly moved like a whirlwind and appeared in front of Qi Yun in an instant.

PAK!

That was a really hard slap!

He smacked Qi Yun's face so hard that he went flying out.

"AHHH!"

Qi Yun howled as he was sprawled on the floor and clutched his face. He couldn't believe that Jiang Ning actually dared to hit him.

If not for the stinging pain on his face, he wouldn't believe it at all!

"You think any Tom, Dick and Harry can talk to me?"

"I don't care about this Qi family. Even if some Zhang family or some Wang family or some Li family dares to be so longwinded in front of me, I'm going to slap them like this too," said Jiang Ning calmly as he looked at Qi Yun.

"You...YOU!!!"

Qi Yun's face was all red and he was furious. "I'm from the Qi family in the north! The north...AH!"

Before he could finish speaking, Jiang Ning slapped him again. This time, a few teeth flew, so there was blood dribbling from his mouth.

"Gou!" Jiang Ning shouted.

"Yes Big Boss!"

"Get him to shut up!"

"Got it!"

Brother Gou went up and grabbed Qi Yun by the collar, then slapped him several times in a row. Qi Yun's face was now filled with blood and was howling away.

Jin Yang and his son were both shocked.

That was Qi Yun!

The second son of the Qi family in the north!

Jiang Ning dared to hit him too?

Was he nuts?

He was definitely nuts!

After more than ten slaps, Qi Yun was crying out for mercy and didn't dare to say anything else. He collapsed onto the floor and was shaking all over.

He had never seen a nutcase like that before.

He already said that he was from the Qi family in the north and Jiang Ning still dared to hit him?

"Remember, you have one day." Jiang Ning glanced at Jin Yang and didn't anymore. He turned and left.

Qi Yun was still lying on the floor and shaking all over. His face was already swollen from being slapped, and it was as swollen as a pig's head.

Jin Yang's body stiffened up and his throat went dry.

He thought that when Qi Yun appeared, Jiang Ning would have to bow down and kneel and admit his mistake. But Jiang Ning actually ended up hitting Qi Yun as well.

Without mercy!

He quickly walked over and helped Qi Yun to his feet. "Young Master Qi? Young Master Qi?"

"Ah!!! Don't hit me! Don't hit me!"

Qi Yun started convulsing and his face paled. He breathed a sigh of relief when he saw it was Jin Yang, but there was still fear in his eyes, afraid that Jiang Ning hadn't left.

"Young Master Qi, are you alright?" asked Jin Yang.

Qi Yun got to his feet. His speech was a little slurred and he couldn't stop his tears and mucus from flowing. "I'm going to get them, I'm going to kill them!!"

"I'm going home right now and get fighters to...finish them off!!" Qi Yun yelled this and ran out.

"Young Master Qi! What about the Jin family? What about my family?"

Jin Yang ran after him to ask, but Qi Yun had already run out of sight.

Jiang Ning gave him one day to get out of Shengcheng, and if he didn't leave...

He didn't dare to think about what might happen!

Jiang Ning even dared to hit Qi Yun, which meant he didn't have any regard for the Qi family at all.

This backer of theirs wasn't reliable at all.

"Dad, what do we do now?" Jin Ran was also trembling all over from the terrible pain.

He could see that Jiang Ning wasn't afraid of the Qi family at all. Now the Jin family had offended Jiang Ning, so if they didn't leave now, they would really die here.

Jin Yang clenched his teeth and held his fists tightly as he looked at the bodyguards still sprawling on the floor and Jin Ran. Suddenly he snapped and ran over to Jin Ran and started slapping him!

PAK! PAK! PAK!

"It's all your fault for being this useless wastrel! Why did you have to offend this demon! Why did you offend him!!!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Jin Yang seemed to have gone mad. He held onto Jin Ran and slapped him hard again and again.

"My family has been destroyed in your hands!"

"You rebellious child! You little bastard!"

Jin Yang cursed and slapped him again.

If Jin Ran hadn't tried to bully Lin Yuzhen, he wouldn't have offended Jiang Ning.

His family wouldn't have landed in such a predicament today. He wouldn't have had to let the woman he loved most be violated by another man!

All this fury was unleashed in this instant. Jin Yang couldn't control himself and Jin Ran howled in pain from the slapping.

"Dad! Spare me! Spare me!!"

Jin Ran's limbs were all broken so there was no way he could fight back. He could only cry and beg for mercy.

He knew that the Jin family was doomed. They were completely doomed.

If they didn't get out of Shengcheng in one day, Jiang Ning was really going to finish them off.

Jiang Ning didn't even need to deal with them personally. As long as he said the word, there were thousands in Shengcheng who were willing to help Jiang Ning to wipe the Jin family out.

After leaving the Jin house, Jiang Ning went to Masquerade Club.

The main gate was locked and the doors were sealed.

He tore the seal and walked right in, leaving Brother Gou to guard the door.

It hadn't been long, but while everything was still here, the people here weren't the same anymore. The club looked a mess. Nobody looked after the bonsai plants, so many of them had withered.

Jiang Ning walked to the backyard and the pond water was murky. There was a figure carefully wading through the pond and picking up the lotus leaves that had gone underwater.

"Mr Jiang?"

Butler Zhao turned when he heard a sound and there was surprise on his face.

His hair was a little messy and looked like he hadn't bothered about it. He didn't look neat and smart like he used to.

Butler Zhao quickly got out of the pond and wiped his hands, but didn't dare to shake Jiang Ning's hand.

"Master Fu has passed on, so I found a secret place to bury him," said Butler Zhao. "There were people from the north who came looking for his body, but they left after they couldn't find it."

Jiang Ning nodded.

He knew that Butler Zhao had followed Master Fu since he was younger, so he was one of Master Fu's most trusted ones.

"But unfortunately, Broken Sword's body..."

Butler Zhao's face was filled with regret and sadness.

"Don't worry."

Jiang Ning just said these two words.

Butler Zhao looked up with a start and his eyes lit up. A tear started coming to his eye.

"Thank you! Thank you so much!" he quickly said through his tears.

Jiang Ning had made sure that nobody violated Broken Sword's body. That meant a lot to him.

"Master Fu told me before that Masquerade Club is actually a place to get information. Can it still operate in that capacity now?" Jiang Ning went straight to the point.

Butler Zhao had always been the one in charge of this, so he knew best.

"Mr Jiang has a need for this place?"

Butler Zhao had intended to give the place up.

Master Fu had set up this place himself and had nothing to do with the Luo family in the north.

But since both Master Fu and Broken Sword were dead, Butler Zhao didn't want

to continue running it. He was already prepared to find somewhere else to spend his remaining days.

But he couldn't bear to leave this place. He had lived here for twenty years after all, and he knew every corner of this place.

"I have a need for this place," Jiang Ning didn't beat around the bush. "To me, having a place to gather information is very important."

He took a step forward and looked at Butler Zhao. "Butler Zhao is familiar with this, so if you still have an attachment to this place, do you think you could stay and continue running this club?"

Butler Zhao trembled.

"Don't worry, I won't interfere at all. You can have full control of the place. I just hope that this club can continue to be in existence so that when I need information, I can come here and get some from you."

Butler Zhao's lips trembled. He knew how valuable an information network like his was. There were so many powers from the north who came looking for him secretly and wanted him to work for them.

He knew that if he refused them, he might have trouble living in safety for the rest of his life.

Perhaps he might suddenly die without even knowing what hit him.

And now Jiang Ning said he needed him?



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"I...I'm just a useless old man, so why would Mr Jiang need me?" said Butler Zhao with a bitter smile.

"An old person in the family is like having a treasure in the house. I trust in Master Fu's judgment."

Butler Zhao looked straight at Jiang Ning for a full ten seconds.

"Alright," he nodded in reply after a moment of silence. "Actually, I really can't bear to leave this place."

"I can tell. But the club is so big and you probably can't take care of all these plants by yourself, right? Go and hire the staff that used to work here. If you need anything, just let me know," said Jiang Ning with a smile.

He then turned and left.

Butler Zhao knew what to do. Jiang Ning didn't need to worry about such a reliable man.

Soon enough, news of Masquerade Club reopening spread far and wide, attracting the attention of many.

This valuable information network was very attractive to many.

Someone came looking for Butler Zhao to ask why he had reopened the club despite refusing his offer earlier. But before he could set a foot past the door, his legs were broken!

One after another came to look for trouble and their legs were broken and left for dead at the club's entrance.

The bloodcurdling howls were to warn all those with ill intentions that someone was backing this club already!

Jiang Ning was very displeased at how messy the illegal circle of Shengcheng was.

This would affect Lin Group's expansion and affect Lin Yuzhen's mood too.

He would not allow this.

Jiang Ning sent word out: In two days, he wanted everybody who didn't belong in Shengcheng to get lost!

Otherwise they would have to bear the consequences!

The illegal circle of Shengcheng started getting excited.

All the bosses were so excited! The Demon King had finally spoken.

The Demon King had spoken up for them!

Nobody would dare to make trouble in Shengcheng anymore!

The moment Jiang Ning sent this word out, the bosses responded by saying they would support Jiang Ning. Whoever dared to make trouble in Shengcheng was going against Jiang Ning and they swore to kill them off!

There was suddenly an uproar in the illegal circle.

They were threatened before this, but now they weren't afraid of anything. Even if the powers in the north wanted to control them, they fought back and didn't care.

The representatives from the north who were here to gain resources for themselves started getting angry.

"Who on earth is this Jiang Ning? He actually dares to say such bold things!"

"These idiots in the illegal circle actually listen to him? They think we'll listen to him? Dream on!"

"Telling us to get lost in two days? Hoho, I've never seen someone so arrogant in my life!"

All the men from the north didn't think much of this, and even felt contempt for Jiang Ning's words.

Even Master Fu was dead now, so what was this fellow from a small place like Donghai?

He wasn't embarrassed to say such boastful words and told them to get out of Tianhai. Wasn't he afraid that he might get attacked in return?

But the next day, someone was tied to the lighthouse at Shengcheng's harbor. He wasn't wearing anything, his face was all swollen and his limbs were all broken as he hung from the lighthouse.

Ye Kuang!

From the Luo family!

The disciple Ye Xinhua was so proud of!

He was infamous as Fierce Tiger in the north!

He had come to Tianhai too, and he had actually...been beaten up so badly, and had to suffer such humiliation by being hung at the harbor!

Suddenly all the men from the north started shaking in fear.

They knew that this was a warning to them!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Who was Ye Kuang?

He was someone from the Luo family!

He was under the care of the Luo family in the north, and was the prized disciple of that highly skilled martial artist, Ye Xinhuo!

Everyone knew that Ye Xinhuo had killed off Broken Sword and caused an uproar in the north not too long ago.

But now his disciple had his limbs broken, his clothes stripped and was hanging from the lighthouse.

What an insult!

Nobody dared to say anything. Some people were frightened, some were caught off guard. Some were too shocked to react.

Nobody thought that such a day would come when someone like Ye Kuang would end up in this state.

Never mind the rest. Even Jiang Ning didn't expect this.

He had told Brother Gou to settle this. He only told him to give those from outside Tianhai a warning and Brother Gou said he knew what to do.

But this fellow actually did it like this.

Jiang Ning decided in his heart that he was going to leave anything that needed some brains to Huang Yuming. Brother Gou could just focus on beating people up.

Shengcheng was in an uproar.

All those who didn't have any regard for Jiang Ning at all earlier were now frightened and uneasy. None of them dared to stay in Shengcheng anymore and quickly left.

They didn't think they would end up much better than Ye Kuang if they didn't leave.

If even someone like Ye Kuang was humiliated like this, then they would probably die if they didn't leave now.

This Jiang Ning was way too overbearing.

He didn't seem to be afraid of anything at all.

In just a day, all the representatives from the north who had sneaked into Shengcheng all left quietly and left no traces behind.

Shengcheng became calm again.

It was so simple. There as no fight, no loss of blood and nobody died. Jiang Ning just sent the word out.

Now everyone knew who the real king in Shengcheng was!

Shengcheng's order quickly resumed. The bosses of the illegal circle knew very well that as long as Jiang Ning was around, Shengcheng's illegal circle wouldn't fall into anybody else's hands.

They also understood what they had to do and what choice they had to make.

Jiang Ning didn't have to tell them what to do.

All the bosses followed Donghai's example and took the initiative to cut off all illegal businesses that they had, and contributed everything towards Shengcheng's infrastructure.

They would earn less, but at least they would live longer.

Zhang Cheng was faraway in Donghai when he heard this news and was amazed at this.

He was even more amazed by Jiang Ning's incredible ability.

Even Master Fu back then wouldn't have been able to achieve this.

"Boss, should we go back? Shengcheng will only become better and better," asked Gao Fei.

"No matter how much better it gets, do you think it will be better than Donghai?" Zhang Cheng shook his head. "Remember, being able to stay in Donghai is a rare opportunity and we were very lucky. Others won't get this sort of chance again, you understand?"

"Got it!"

There was only one figure in his mind who was standing right at the top!

Jiang Ning!

Anywhere with him around would definitely be different from the rest of the world.

What he didn't know was that Jiang Ning was now looking at Brother Gou and didn't know what to do with this fellow.

"I left him with a pair of boxer shorts," said Brother Gou in a tiny voice as he hung his head. "I didn't want to hurt anyone's eyes. If I stripped him bare, his dick is so tiny, it's embarrassing."

Jiang Ning didn't know whether to laugh or cry.

"You did a pretty good job."

"Really?"

Brother Gou immediately lifted his head at these words and became gleeful. "I'm best at doing this sort of thing! If we don't warn those fucking bastards, then they'd really think we're easy to bully!"

Jiang Ning's lips twitched and Brother Gou's voice became soft again.

"Big Boss, should I have pulled his boxers off too?"

Jiang Ning waved his hand and got Brother Gou to go out. He didn't want to see his face anymore, in case he couldn't stop himself from kicking Brother Gou.

After Brother Gou walked out, Jiang Ning's sighed helplessly. "Yuming, you'd better come back as soon as possible."



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Huang Yuming had gone up north to help Fei with some matters, and he should be coming back soon.

Jiang Ning had an easier job with someone who could use his brains. At least he didn't have to explain so much when it came to most things. Huang Yuming understood what he was trying to say and would do a good job of arranging matters.

Brother Gou was good at fighting, but making him use his brains was asking too much of him.

Jiang Ning didn't even know that Brother Gou thought that he had been complimented. Brother Gou had gone to boast all about it the moment he stepped out of the room.

Meanwhile.

In the north.

The Luo house.

Luo Yongqian's expression looked like death as he stared at the photo in his hands. The veins on his forehead were bulging.

He then suddenly tore the photo of Ye Kuang hanging from the lighthouse into several pieces and slammed his palm on the desk.

"Outrageous! OUTRAGEOUS! Does that bastard not know that Ye Kuang is one of mine?!"

Ye Xinhuo stood to one side and didn't say anything. His face looked equally nasty.

As Ye Kuang's master, everyone else would mention him along with Ye Kuang.

But now, Ye Kuang, who was previously known as the Fierce Tiger of the north, was now known as the fellow who was stripped of all his clothes except a floral patterned pair of boxer shorts and hung on the lighthouse! And that fellow's master was Ye Xinhuo!

So now his name was associated with being stripped bare, floral patterned boxers and being hung from a lighthouse.

Ye Xinhuo had lived with great pride all his life and had never been so insulted before!

He had just killed Broken Sword and his reputation had just risen to the sky.

And now this incident was like a huge tub of cold water that put everything out.

"Where on earth is that Jiang Ning from?" Luo Yongqian could barely hold it in.

He didn't expect Shengcheng to be this troublesome. He had just finished off one Master Fu and now a Jiang Ning had appeared. He was even more ferocious than Master Fu, more fearless, and didn't seem to know where to draw the line at all!

"I've already checked, but he doesn't seem to have any background," replied Ye Xinhuo in a low voice. "The north only has one Jiang family, but this family would never bother about a tiny place like Donghai."

Luo Yongqian frowned. Of course he knew which Jiang family that was. That Jiang family was a real top tier family!

That was a truly powerful family!

He had never heard that the Jiang family had someone called Jiang Ning either. The current head of the Jiang family had no children, even though apparently his first wife had given birth to a child many years ago. But that child had passed away more than a decade ago.

It was impossible for Jiang Ning to have anything to do with this Jiang family.

"I suspect he's using a fake name," continued Ye Xinhuo. "It might be one of the powers in the north trying to purposely confuse everyone else."

"Tsk, purposely confuse everyone else? Who would dare to do such a thing?" Luo Yongqian laughed coldly. "Using the Jiang family's name like this would be asking to die!"

Even though Jiang Ning never admitted to being from the Jiang family and didn't reveal any connection to them, his domineering methods did remind one of that Jiang family.

"Where's Ye Kuang?" Luo Yongqian waved his hand. He didn't want to think about this now.

"He's back, but he's locked himself in the room."

He was clearly too embarrassed to go out.

It had already taken a very strong heart for Ye Kuang to decide against killing himself. But Ye Xinhuo knew that this disciple of his was now as good as useless. He was a lost cause now.

"Damn it, damn it!!"

Luo Yongqian became furious again. His family could have had another strong fighter in their team, but now?

He was left with nothing but humiliation!

He had lost the illegal circle of Shengcheng and now one of his had been tortured and humiliated. This was an even bigger slap in his face! His face was all swollen now!

Now everyone in the north was laughing at his family!

"Master, I will pay Tianhai a visit," Ye Xinhuo said in a sinister voice. "I will settle everything and everyone I need to deal with!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

He had to settle this feud.

The Luo family was deeply embarrassed, not just because they had lost the illegal circle of Shengcheng, but more because of what happened to Ye Kuang. Everyone was laughing at the Luo family.

If they didn't kill Jiang Ning, then the Luo family would remain a laughingstock for the rest of their lives.

"We have to kill Jiang Ning for sure," Luo Yongqian said with a malicious voice. "But we have to wait for a while."

He was a careful person. Since he didn't know exactly who was backing Jiang Ning, he didn't want to attack him now.

"I've already sent someone to investigate the Jiang family and we'll get news soon. Once we confirm that this Jiang Ning has nothing to do with that Jiang family, then you can make your move!" Luo Yongqian continued coldly, "Besides making a move, you have to make sure everything you do rings out loud and clear! I want everyone to know that the illegal circles of Tianhai still belong to the Luo family!"

Ye Xinhua nodded. "Got it."

He was now waiting for the result of the investigation. He was waiting to see if this Jiang Ning had anything to do with that true blue powerful Jiang family.

If he didn't...

Then he was going to get nasty!

Ye Kuang was the biggest joke of the century and the Luo family became the butt of their jokes again.

After Broken Sword killed off so many family members that they had to hide themselves at home, they managed to kill off Broken Sword to get their reputation back. But now another one of theirs was stripped bare and was hung from a lighthouse.

The Luo family wasn't very flashy in the first place, but now they couldn't lie low even if they tried.

And now, not only the Luo family was guessing who Jiang Ning was. The other families that pulled out of Tianhai were making guesses too.

Many of them suspected that Jiang Ning was someone from the Jiang family in the north, so they started using all means and ways to find out if this was the

case.

Meanwhile.

At the Jiang house.

One of the truly powerful families of the north, the Jiang family!

If the Luo family could be considered a powerful family of the north, then the Jiang family was the king of them all, riding high and mighty above them, and the rest could only dream of becoming like the Jiang family.

Every person from this sort of family was important, and wouldn't do anything for fun.

But if they did anything, it would cause a huge uproar!

The manor of the Jiang family was very quiet. The servants never dared to make too much noise. The rules were strictly followed here and nobody dared to step over the line.

There was a middle aged man practicing his calligraphy in the study.

The strokes on the paper were vigorous and energetic, and seemed to surge together with everyone!

"Master, another one has come asking again." A voice rang out from outside the study.

The man did not stop writing. He continued writing what he started, but it was clear that his strokes had gotten faster and a little messy compared to the steady and leisurely pace he was at earlier. In fact he also seemed a little angry.

"Around eight families have their eye on Young Master, it sounds like we might have a bit of trouble."

The voice outside the study spoke again.

"HUMPH!"

The man in the study scoffed coldly. "What Young Master?!"

"That fellow doesn't want to admit that he's a Jiang! What sort of Young Master is he?!"

"Now that he's capable and he's risen above the rest, he looks down on the

Jiang family!"

The man in a suit standing outside the door didn't dare to say anymore.

The man in the room was angry, but he wasn't angry with Jiang Ning. He was angry with himself.

If he had been able to hold his ground back then, Jiang Ning and his mother wouldn't have been chased out of the Jiang family. His wife wouldn't have died, and Jiang Ning wouldn't have hated him to the point where he refused to acknowledge his own father!

He was glad to hear that Jiang Ning had left that place, because he knew that if Jiang Ning continued to stay there, he might die anytime.

Even though Jiang Ning's abilities and standing was different from before, his master was that nutcase!

In the end?

When he sent someone to look for Jiang Ning, this boy chased his men away and even asked if he was after Jiang Ning's power or money!

This little punk was being sarcastic to him and wouldn't forgive him at all!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

After a long time, the man in the study calmed down.

"You don't have to do anything. They're mere ants, that boy can handle them himself," the man said calmly. "Also, since he doesn't admit that he's from this family, then this family has no such person."

"Got it."

The man at the door understood what his master meant and left.

Jiang Ning had caused such a huge commotion and many people thought that Jiang Ning was not very smart and was as good as sending himself to his grave by doing such a thing. But he knew that Jiang Ning was capable of doing this and was able to handle the consequences of doing so. In fact, Jiang Ning might have even purposely set things up this way.

"Ha, he doesn't care for my help anyway."

The man shook his head and laughed. Then he picked up his brush again and continued to write with a calm heart once again.

News went out very quickly.

Jiang Ning had nothing to do with that Jiang family of the north!

Almost instantly, everyone understood that Jiang Ning was a name made up to confuse everyone into thinking that he might be related to the Jiang family in the north.

Now that everyone was clear that he wasn't part of that family, Jiang Ning was doomed!

He had offended too many people this time round, and the ones he offended were all the powerful families of the north.

The only thing that awaited Jiang Ning was death!

The Luo family got the news too.

Luo Yongqian confirmed it over and over. Once he was sure that this was information from the Jiang family itself, he didn't hesitate any longer.

"Xinhuo, you can make your move!"

Ye Xinhuo soon sent word that he was headed for Donghai.

He was going to the state of Tianhai, but he wasn't going to Shengcheng. He

was going straight to Donghai!

He had even challenged Jiang Ning to a duel.

The north was in an uproar.

Everyone knew that Ye Xinhuo was out to take revenge. Jiang Ning humiliated Ye Kuang, so that was as good as humiliating both Ye Xinhuo and the Luo family. Ye Xinhuo had to kill Jiang Ning to restore the Luo family's reputation.

But for a grandmaster level fighter like him to come personally to kill someone off sounded like he was being a big bully.

He had even killed off a highly skilled fighter like Broken Sword!

The invitation to a duel was written in red text: Jiang Ning, insulting my disciple is as good as insulting me, Ye Xinhuo! I want to challenge you to a duel to decide who wins and who loses, as well as who will live and who will die!

In less than a day, the invitation landed in Jiang Ning's hands.

Almost everyone thought that Jiang Ning wouldn't accept this invitation.

That would be as good as sending himself to die.

That was Ye Xinhuo!

The martial arts grandmaster who just killed off Broken Sword – Ye Xinhuo!

Ye Xinhuo was going to kill Jiang Ning for offending the Luo family.

An invitation to a duel was just an excuse to let Ye Xinhuo openly go ahead and kill Jiang Ning.

He was there to reinstate the Luo family's authority.

He was going to let the Luo family regain control of Shengcheng's illegal circle.

He didn't care if Jiang Ning accepted it or not. He was going to smash him to smithereens either way!

Meanwhile.

In Donghai.

Jiang Ning looked at the invitation in his hands and burst out laughing.

"You still dare to laugh! What's going on? Why is there an invitation to a duel out of nowhere?" Lin Yuzhen was going to die from anxiety soon. Her eyes were red as she said, "You're not to accept this invitation!"

Jiang Ning looked at Lin Yuzhen. "Why, are you scared that I might die?"

"You...don't say such things! I'm not letting you accept it!" Her voice started to crack.

The invitation talked about life and death and she became frantic when she saw those words. It was too dangerous.

Especially now that she knew this Ye Xinhuo was that frightening highly skilled martial artist who killed Broken Sword.

"If you dare to accept it, I'll tell Mum and Dad! I'll say...I'll say that you don't want me anymore!"

Lin Yuzhen was really on the verge of tears as she tugged at Jiang Ning pleadingly.

She was really scared. She was scared that something would happen to Jiang Ning. If Jiang Ning really died...she didn't know what to do.

Jiang Ning reached a hand out to gently pat the hand that Lin Yuzhen used to clutch his arm tightly with when he saw the anxiety and worry in her eyes.

"Wifey, I've forgotten to tell you one thing."

"What is it?"

"In this life, nobody can take me away from you. Not even the gods above!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Jiang Ning's words were so ridiculously domineering.

Lin Yuzhen went into a daze for a while and understood what he meant. Her eyes were red as she asked, "So you're still going to accept the invitation?"

She pursed her lips together. This was the first time she felt so scared.

"Trust me." Jiang Ning held onto Lin Yuzhen's hands.

He could feel that Lin Yuzhen cared for him. She was concerned for him and worried for him.

If he didn't have to, he didn't want to bother himself with Ye Xinhua's invitation at all.

But this time he had to accept it. He was going to use this chance to make sure everyone knew that Donghai was a place that was forbidden to all troublemakers!

Lin Yuzhen looked at Jiang Ning and didn't say anything for a long while.

Finally, she nodded anyway.

She knew how powerful Jiang Ning was, and she also knew that Jiang Ning never did anything he wasn't confident of.

Even if she was worried, she had to believe in him, no?

"I've decided."

Lin Yuzhen's voice was very soft and slightly hoarse, but it sounded determined.

"Decided on what?"

"I'll call you hubby at home too," replied Lin Yuzhen seriously.

Everyone thought that Jiang Ning wouldn't accept the invitation. He might even take this time to quickly escape from Donghai.

After all, Jiang Ning had no reputation compared to Ye Xinhua, so he couldn't be a match for Ye Xinhua.

If Jiang Ning agreed, that would be as good as walking into his own grave!

But Jiang Ning actually accepted it!

This news was like a huge bomb that exploded instantly.

"Jiang Ning accepted the challenge? Is he tired of living?!"

"He's asking for it! He's really overestimated himself!"

"That's Ye Xinhuo we're talking about! Does he think he's better than Broken Sword?"

"He's doomed! Jiang Ning's going to die for sure! MUAHAHA!"

Almost everyone was sure that Jiang Ning was going to die.

But there were some who knew that Jiang Ning had no choice but to accept it. If he didn't accept this challenge, then the reputation of Donghai as a forbidden territory wouldn't hold any water.

When that happened, it would be a problem to even keep Donghai, much less control Shengcheng.

Jiang Ning had to accept it. Even if he might die, he had to accept it.

But they were all sure of the ending. Jiang Ning was going to die in Ye Xinhuo's hands!

There were more and more spectators gathering in the north hoping to watch a good show, and there were also many who started to quietly gather their forces.

Once Jiang Ning died, Tianhai's illegal circles would have no leader again.

It would be harder for the Luo family to control all of Shengcheng again. It was such a large cake, so naturally it had to split among several parties.

Taking sole control of the territory wasn't a wise thing to do.

Everyone started feeling the tension in the air again.

Ye Xinhuo heard that Jiang Ning had agreed. He only laughed coldly and said disdainfully that he was going to kill Jiang Ning in ten days!

Meanwhile, in Donghai.

Besides Lin Yuzhen, nobody else was nervous.

Brother Gou and the rest were so calm. It was as if nothing had happened.

Even Zhang Cheng started getting worried. The one who sent the invitation was Ye Xinhuo!

That was the terrifying fighter who killed Broken Sword!

"Brother Gou, has Mr Jiang really accepted the invitation?" Zhang Cheng couldn't help asking Brother Gou. His face was filled with worry. "Isn't that a bit rash?"

"Rash?" Brother Gou's eyes widened. "What's so rash about killing that old man?"

"That's Ye Xinhuo!"

"Ye Xinhuo?"

Brother Gou's eyes widened even more. "Is he very formidable?"

Zhang Cheng didn't know what else to say. He gulped and nodded.

"No matter how formidable he is, could he be more formidable than my Big Boss? Tsk, since he wants to come here and die, then my Big Boss will grant him his wish. Otherwise that wouldn't be very kind of my Big Boss, right?"

Brother Gou wasn't bothered at all. He and the other wolves just continued with their training.

He couldn't be bothered with any of this. He knew that there wasn't anyone more formidable than Jiang Ning in this world. He also knew that it wasn't his job to be worried about these useless things.

Their job was to become stronger and stronger so that they would always be eligible to follow Jiang Ning and to protect Donghai!

The duel was going to happen in ten days!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!